

The first and Second Part of  
A  
SEASONABLE, LEGAL,  
AND  
HISTORICALL VINDICATION,  
AND

*Chronological COLLECTION of the Good, Old, Fundamen-  
tall Liberties, Franchises, Rights, Laws of all English Free-  
men their best Inheritance, Birthright, Security, against all  
Arbitrary Tyranny, and Egyptian Burdens) and of their strenuous  
Defence in all former Ages; of late years most dangerously un-  
dermined, and almost totally subverted, under the specious  
Disguise of their Defence and future Establishment, upon a false  
Basis, by their pretended, Greatest Propugners.*

WHEREIN IS,

Irrefragably evinced by Parliamentary Records, Proofs, Presidents,  
That we have such Fundamentall Liberties, Franchises, Rights, Laws. That to  
attempt or effect the Subversion of all or any of them, (or of our Fundamentall  
Government) by Fraud or Force, is High Treason. The principal of them sum-  
med up in X. Propositions; The chief printed Treasurie offering them, speci-  
fied: A Chronological History of our Ancestors, zeal, vigilancy, courage, pru-  
dence, in gaining, retaining, enlarging, defending, aff confirming and perpetuating  
them to posterity, by Great Charters, Statutes, New Confirmations, Excom-  
munications, Speciall Constitutions, Consultations, Presidents, Declarations, Re-  
monstrances, Oaths, Protestations, Vows, Leagues, Covenants, and likewise by  
their Arms, when necessitated, during all the Britons, Romans, Saxons, Danes,  
Normans and English Kings Reigns, till this present; collected for present and  
future publique benefit: with a Brief Touch of their late unparalleled Invi-  
gmenes and Subversions in every particular: The Trial of all such actors by  
their Peers, and Juries, justified, as the only legal, well, most indifferent, and  
all other late arbitrary Judicatories, erected for their Trial, exploded, as de-  
structive both to our Fundamentall Laws and Liberties.

---

Collected, recommended to the whole English Nation, as the best Legacy he can  
leave them,

By *Williams Prynne of Swainswick, Esquire.*  
The Second Edition Corrected and much Enlarged.

---

Psal. 1.1.3. If the Foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?

Psal. 82.5. They know not, neither will they understand, they walk on in darkness: all the Foundations of the earth are out of course.

London, Printed for the Author, and are to be sold by Edward  
Thomas in Green Arbour, 1695.

## Errata.

**T**N, the Epistle, letter C. page 8. l. 6. read effect. D.p. 2. l. 9.  
**T**r. Tesmond, H. p. 5. l. 19. Censurers, I. p. 5. l. 13 of r. our  
**K**. p. 7. l. 28. r. Heirs, L. p. 4. l. 20. r. exerceerunt. In the Margin  
**H**. p. 3. l. 42. aliquem, I. p. 6. l. 27. pacti L. p. 8. l. 7. 23.

In the Book p.4.l.25. r. as of, p. 13. l. 36. r. were resolved. p. 19. l. 14. r. Vote of p. 24. l. 16. of p. 26. l. 15. of and p. 29. l. 33. Statutes. p. 32. l. 26. r. E. 6. c. 5. p. 35. l. 6. to sedition p. 38. l. 19. r. parts.

Margin, p. 27. l. 13. After r. other, p. 64. l. 3, 4, 5. r. 10. R. 2.  
cap. l. 1 H. 5. 4. 1. 28 H. 6. n. 51. l. 11. r. 4 E. 4.



## To all truely Christian Free-men of England, Patrons of Religion, Free- dom, Lawes, Parliaments, who shall peruse this Treatise.

This Epistle  
should have  
been printed be-  
fore the first  
part; but was  
omitted through  
haste.

Christian READER,

**I**T hath been one of the most detestable Crimes, and highest Impeachments against the Antichristian (a) Popes of Rome, (a) See the several Epistles of Frederick the Emperor against Pope Gregory that under a Saint-like Religious pretext of advancing the Church, Cause, Kingdom of Jesus Christ, they have for some hundred years by past, usurped to themselves (as sole Monarchs of the World in the Right of Christ, whose Vicars they interpret themselves to be) both by Doctrinal Positions and Treasonable Practices, (b) an absolute Sovereign, Tyrannical Power over all Christian Emperors, Kings, Princes of the World (who must derive and hold their Crowns from them alone, upon their good behaviours at their pleasures) not onely to Excommunicate, Censure, Judge, Depose, Murder, Destroy their sacred Persons; but likewise to dispose of their Crowns, Scepters, Kingdoms, and translate them to whom they please.

In pursuance whereof, they have most traiterously, wickedly, seditionously, atheistically, presumed to absolve their Subjects from all their sacred Oaths, Homages, natural Allegiance, and due Obedience to them, instigated, encouraged, yea expressly enjoyned

recent the 4, re-  
corded by Mat.  
Paris, p. 332. to  
693. parsum.

(b) See Extrat.  
de Majoritate  
& Obedientia:

Auzulinius Tri-  
umphus Bellar-  
minus, Beccanu-

and others, De  
Monarchia Re-  
mani Pontificis.  
Hospinius His.  
J. quilib. 3, & 4.

To the truly Christian Reader,

enjoyed (under pain of interdiction, excommunication, and other censures) their own Subjects yea own sons sometimes, both by their Bulls and Agents, to revolt from, rebel, war against, depose, dethrone, murder, stab, poison, destroy them by open force, or secret conspiracies: and stirred up one Christian King, Realm, State, to invade, infest, destroy, usurp upon another; only to advance their own Antichristian Sovereignties, usurpations, Ambition, Rapines, worldly Pompe and Ends: as you may read at leisure in the Statutes of 25 H.8.c.12. 28 H. 8.c.10. 37 H.8.c.17. 13 Eliz. c. 2. 23 Eliz. c.1. 35 Eliz. c. 2. 3 Jacob. c. 1, 2, 4, 5. 7 Jacob.c.6. The Emperour Frederick his Epistles against Pope Gregory the 9. and Innocent the 4. recorded in *Matthew Paris*, and

<sup>Henricus de</sup> *Aventinus Annalium Boiorum*, Mr. *William Tyndale*'s Practice of Popish Prelates; the second *Homily upon vesperebus Angli*. *Witsunday*; the Homilies against disobedience, and wilful <sup>13.2.14,15.</sup> Rebellion; *Bishop Jewels* view of a seditious Bull; *John Bale* in his lives of the Roman Pontiffs; *Doctor Thomas Bilson* in his True difference between Christian subjection, and unchristian Rebellion; *Doctor John White* his Sermon at *Paul's Cross*, March 24. 1625. and Defence of the Way, c.6,10. *Doctor Crakenthorpe* of the Popes temporal Monarchy; *Bishop Morison's* Protestant Apology; *Doctor Beard's* Theatres of God's Judgements, 1.1. c.27, 28. *Doctor Squire* of Antichrist; *John Bodin* his Commonwealth, 1.1.c.9. The learned *Morney Lord du Plessy*, his Mystery of Iniquity, and History of the Papacy. The *General History of France*. *Grimston's* Imperial History. *Matthew Paris*, *Speed*, *Holinshed*, *Cambden*, and others, in the lives of King *John*, *Henry the 3.* *Queen Elizabeth*, and other of our Kings, with hundreds of printed Sermons on the 5 of November.

(c) See *Maffei us Vezin & Petrus Ribade- niera in vita Ignatii Loyola.* *Hegelins Micro- Pope Paul the 3. Anno 1540*, which Order consisting one-  
ly  
<sup>come, p.179.</sup>

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

ly of ten persons at first, and confined only to sixty by this Pope, hath so monstrously increased by the Popes and Spaniards favours and assistance (whose chief Janizaries, Factors, Intelligencers they are) that in the year 1626. (d) (d) See Lewis they caused the picture of Ignatius their Founder to be cut in Owen his Jesu- Brafs, with a goodly Olive Tree growing (like Jesse's root) out of his side, spreading its branches into all kingdoms and Pro- vices of the World, where the Jesuites have any Colledges and Seminaries, with the name of the Province at the foot of the branch, which hath as many leaves as they have Colledges and Residencies in that Province; in which leaves, are the names of the Towns and Villages where these Colledges are situated: Round about the Tree are the Pictures of all the illustrious Persons of their Order; and in Ignatius his right hand, there is a Paper, wherein these words are engraven, *Ego sicut Oliva fructifera in domo Dei*, taken out of Ps. 52. 8. which pourtraictures they then print- ed and published to the world: wherein they set forth the number of their Colledges and Seminaries to be no less then 777. (increased to 155 more, by the year 1640.) in all 932. as they published in like Pictures & Pageans printed at Antwerp, 1640. Besides sundry New Colledges and Seminaries erected since.

In these Colledges and Seminaries of theirs, they had then (as they print) 15591 Fellows of their Society of Jesu, besides the Novices, Scholars, and Lay-brethren of their Order, amounting to neer ten times that number. So infinitely did this evil weed grow and spread it self, within one hundred years after its first planting. And which is most observable, of these Colledges and Seminaries they reckoned then no less then 15 (secrect ones) \* IN PROVINCIA SPECULUM JESUITICUM. p. 210. ANGLICANA, in the Province of ENGLAND, where were 267 SOCII or Fellows of that Society: besides 4 COLLEDGES OF ENGLISH JESUITES ELSEWHERE. In IRELAND and elsewhere 8 Colledges of IRISH JESUITES: and in SCOTLAND and otherwhere 2 Residencies of SCOTTISH JESUITES.

What the chief imployments of Ignatius and his num-

rious swarms of Disciples are in the World, his own Society at the time of his Canonization for a Romish Saint, sufficiently discovered in their painted Pageants, then shewed to the people, (e) wherein they pourtrayed this new Saint holding the whole world in his hand, and fire streaming out forth of his heart (rather to set the whole world on fire by Combustions, Wars, Treasons, Powder-plots, Schismes new State, and old Church-Heresies, then to enlighten it) with this Motto; VENI IGNEM MITTFRE: I came to send fire

(e) See *Lettres* into the World; which the University of Cracow in Poland Owen by running Register, objected (amongst other Articles) against them, Anno 1622, and Alphonsus de Vargas more largely insisteth on in *Looking glass. his Relation de Stratagematis & Sophismatis Politici Jesuitarum Anatomy of them, &c.* A.D. 1641. c. 7, 8, 24. the English

Their number being so infinite, and the (f) Pope and Nunney at Spain too, having long since (by (g) Campanella's ad-

(g) De Monar-vice) erected many Colledges in Rome, Italy, Spain, the Nether-  
lands, Hispanica, Iberlands, and elsewhere, for English, Scottish, Irish Jesuites  
p. 146, 147, (as well as for such secular Priests, Friars, Nuns) of purpose  
148, 149, 204, to promote their designs against the Protestant Princes,  
234, 235, 236, Realms, Churches, Parliaments of England, Scotland, Ireland, &c  
185, 186.

(h) See *Thomas to reduce them under their long prosecuted (h) UNIVERSAL Campanella de MONARCHY over them, by Fraud, Policy, Treason, in- Monarchia His- tetic Divisions, and Wars, being unable to effect it by their quodlibets, Col. own Power*; no doubt of late years many hundreds, if not thousands, of this Society, have crept into England, p. 91, 10107.

Scotland and Ireland, lurking under several disguises; yea, an whole Colledge of them late weekly in counsel, in or near Westminster, some few years since, under *Contra the Popes Nuncio*, on purpose to embroyle England and Scotland in bloody civil wars, therby to endanger, shake, subvert these Realms, and destroy the late King (as you may

Advice a tome  
les Estats de  
Europe, touches  
les maximas  
Fundamentales  
de Government  
& differences  
Ispagnols, Pa-  
ris, 1625.

Commons special Order, A.D. 1643, who occasioned, excited, fo-  
mented, the first and second intended (but happily prevented) wars between England and Scotland, and after that, the unhappy Differences, Wars, between the King, Parliament, and our three Protestant Kingdoms, to bring them to utter de-

And all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

solation, and extirpate our reformed Religion. **X**

The Kings Forces (in which many of them were Soldiers) after some yeers wars being defeated, thereupon their Father *Ignatius* being a SOULDIER, and they his Military sons, not a few of them (i) secretly insinuated themselves as Soldiers, into the Parliaments Army and Forces, (as they had formerly done into (k.) the Kings) where they so cunningly acted their parts, as extraordinary illuminates, gifted brethren, and grand States-men, that they soon leavened many of the Officers, Troopers and common Souldiers, with their dangerous Jesuitical State-politicks, and (l) Practises, put them upon sundry strange designs, to new-mould the old Monarchical Government, Parliament, Church, Ministers, Laws of England; erecting a New General Council of Army-Officers and Agitators for that purpose; acting more like a Parliament and Supreme Dictators, then Souldiers. And at last instigated the Army by open force. (against their Commissions, Duties, Oaths, Protestations and Solemn League & Covenant) to Impeach, imprison, seclude, first elevē Commoners; then some six or seven Lords; after that to secure, seclude the Majority of the Commons House, (supress the whole House of Lords, destroy the King, Parliament, Government, Priviledges, Liberties of the Kingdom & Nation, for whose defence they were first raised, which by no other adverse power they could effect. This produced new bloody divisions, animosities, wars, in and between our three Protestant Realms and Nations; & after with our Protestant Allies of the Netherlands, (\*Campanella's express old projected Plots to subject us both to the Popes and Spaniards Monarchies, effected by the Spaniards Gold and Agents) with sundry heavy Monthly Taxes, Excises, Oppression, Sales of the Churches, Crowns, and of many Nobles and Gentlemens Lands and Estates, to their undoing, our whole Nations impoverishing, and discontent, an infinite profuse expence of Treasure, of Protestant blood both by Land and Sea, decay of Trade, with other sad eff. &c. in all our three Kingdoms; yea, sundry successive New changes of our publick Government, made by the Army-Officers, (who

(i) See my Speech in Parliament, p. 27. & 119.

and the History of Ireland, depend. ney.

(k) Exact Edition, p. 651.

652, 662, 666,

813, 814, 816,

816, 817, 832,

902, 904, 920.

A Collection of Ordinances, p. 267,

313, 354, 424.

(l) See Punny Projects, the History of Inde-

pend. ney, and Armies Declara-

tions, Papers, Proposals,

printed toge-

ther, London,

1647.

\*De Monarchia Hispan. p. 5, 7.

are

To the truly Christian Reader,

are (till ringing the changes) according to *Campanela's* and *Parsons Platforms*. So that if *Fire* may be certainly discerned by the *smoke*; or the *Tree* commonly known by its *Fruit*, as the *Truth it self resolves*, *Math. 12.33.* we may truly cry out to all our *Rulers*, as the *Jews did once to the Rulers of Thessalonica*, in another case, *Act. 17.6.* THOSE (Jesuites) WHO HAVE TURNED THE WORLD UPSIDE DOWN, ARE COME HITHER ALSO; and have turned our *Kingdoms, Kings, Peers, Monarchy, Parliaments, Government, Laws, Liberties*, (yea, our very *Church and Religion* too, in a great measure) UPSIDE DOWNE, even by those very Persons, who were purposely raised, commisioned, waged, engaged by *Protestations, Covenances, Vows, Oathes, Laws, Allegiance and Duty*, to protect them from these *Jesuistical Innovations and subversions*.

And those *Jesuites, Spanish Romish Agents*, who have so far seduced, to deeply engaged them, contrary to all these Obligations, and to their own former printed *Engagements, Remonstrances, Representations, Proposals, Desires, and RESOLUTIONS*, for settling this Nation in its just Rights, the Parliament in their just Priviledges, and the Subjects in their Liberties and Freedoms; published to all the World, in the name of *Sir Thomas Fairfax*, THE ARMY, AND THE GENERAL COUNCIL OF THE ARMY, in one Volume. London, 1647. (which they may do well to peruse) yea, against the *Votes, Intreaties, Desires, Advices*, of both *Houses of Parliament*, the *Generality of the good Ministers*, people of the three whole *Kingdoms*, and their wisest, best affected *Protestant Friends*, who commisioned, raised, paid, assisted them for far other ends. O whether may they, will they not (in all humane probability) rashly, blindly, furiously henceforth lead, drive, precipitate them, to our whole three *Kingdoms, Churches, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties total, final desolation*, and the *Armies* too in conclusion, beyond all hopes of prevention, unless God himself shall miraculously change their *Hearts, Councells*, and reclaim them from their

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

their late destructive, heady violent courses: or put an hook into their Noses, to turn them back by the way by which they came: or, set a timely period to their usurped Armed power and extravagant late proceedings, of such a desperate unparallel'd, unprotestant strange Nature, as none but the very worst of Ignatius his Disciples and Engineers durst set on foot, or still drive on amongst us Protestants. Which I earnestly beseech, adjure, and conjure them now most seriously to lay to heart, before it be over-late.

Those who will take the pains to peruse all or any of these several printed Books (most of them very well worth their reading) written against the Jesuits and their Practices, as well by Papists as Protestants, as namely, *Fides Iesu & Jesuitarum*, printed 1573. *Doctrina Jesuitica principia capta*, Delph. 1589. *Aphorismi Doctrina Jesu* 1608. *Cambitonius*, *De Studiis Jesuitarum abstrusoribus*. Anno 1608. *Iacobus Thuanus*, *Passages of the Jesuits*. Hist. l. 69, 79, 83, 94, 95, 96, 108, 110, 114, 116, 119, 121, 124, 126, 129, 131, 132, 134, 136, 137, 138. *Emmanuel Meteranus* his *Passages of them*, *Belgica Hist.* l. 9, 12, 17, 18, 19, 21, 23, 26, to 34. *Willielmus Bandarius*, *Continuatio Meterani*, l. 37, 38, 39, 40. *Donatus Wesagus*, *Fides Iesu & Jesuitarum*, 1610. *Charakteres Jesuitica*, in several Tomes. *Elias Huchmullerus*, *Historia Jesuitici Ordini*, Anno 1605. *Speculum sive Theoria Doctrina Jesuitica*, *necnon Praxis Jesuitarum*, 1608. *Pasquier* his Jesuite displayed. *Petrus de Wangen*, *Physiognomia Jesuitica*, 1610. *Christopherus Pelargus*, *his Novus Jesuitismus Franciscanus*, *de Verone*, *his Jesuitismus Sicarius*, 1611. *Narratio de proditione Jesuitarum in Magna Brit. Regem*, 1607. *Consilium de Iesuitis Regno Polonia ejiciendis*. The *Acts of the States of Rhetia*, Anno 1561, & 1612, for banishing the Jesuits wholly out of their Territories, *NE STATUS POLITICUS TURBARETUR*, &c. mentioned by *Fortunatus Sprecherus*, *Palladius Rhetica*, l. 6. p. 253, 273. *Melchior Valcius*, *his Furia Gretzero*, &c. remisse, 1611. *Censura Jesuitarum*, *Articuli Jesuitarum*, *cum commone factio* illis *oppo-*  
*sita*

To the truly Christian Reader,

sita, Anti-Jesuites, au Roy par. 1611. *Varia Doctorum Theologorum Theses aduersus quadam Jesuitica Dogmata.* The Remonstrance of the Parliament of Paris to Henry the Great against the re-establishment of the Jesuites; And their Censure of Mariana his book, to be publickly burnt, printed in French, 1610. recited in the General History of France, in Lewis 13. his life, & Peter Matthew, l. 6. par. 3. *Historia Francie. Varia Facultatis Thologiae & Curia Parisiensis, quam aliorum Opuscula, Decreta & Censura contra Jesuitas, Paris 1612.* Conradus Deckerus, *De proprietatibus Jesuitarum, 1611.* *Quarelarum inclyti Regni Hungarie aduersus corupelas Jesuiticas defensio.* Lucas Ofiander, his writing about the Jesuites bloody Plot, Han. 1614. *Iesuitarum per unitas Belgii Provincias Negotiatio, Anno 1616.* Radulphus Hoppijanius, *Historia Jesuitica, 1619.* Discovery of Bogermannus his Catechismus Jesuiticus. Ludovicus Lucius, *Historia Jesuitica, Basil. 1627.* Arcana Imperii Hispanici, 1628. *Mercure Jesuite, in several Tomes, Geneve 1626,* *De Conscientia Jesuitarum, tractat.* *Censura sacre Theologiae Parisiensis, in librum qui inscribitur, Antonii Sanctarelli societatis Iesu, de Heresi, Schismate & Apostasia, &c. Paris, 1626.* Anti-Cotton; Iohannes Henricius, *Deliberatio de compescendo perpetuo crudeli Contra Iesuitarum, Fran. 1633.* A Proclamation of the States of the united Provinces, Anno 1612. And another Proclamation of theirs: with two other Proclamations of the Protestant States of the Marquessate of Maravilla, for the banishing of the Jesuites, London 1629. Alfonso de Vargas Toleraxi, *Relatio ad Reges & Principes Christianos, De Stratagematis & Sophismatis Politicis Societatis Iesu, ad Monarchiam Orbis terrarum sibi conficiendam: in qua Jesuitarum erga Reges & Populos optimè de se meritos infidelitas, ergaq. ipsum Peccatum perfidia, consumacia, & IN FIDEI REBUS NOVANDI LIBIDO,* illustribus documentis comprebatur, Anno 1641. Jubileum, sive Speculum Jesuiticam, exhibens PRÆCIPUA JESUITARUM SCELERA, MOLITIONES, INNOVATIONES, FRAUDES, IMPOSTURAS, ET MENDACIA, CONTRA STATUM ECCLESI-

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

CLESIASTICUM POLITICUMQUE, in & extra  
EUROPEUM ORBEM; primo hoc centenario, confirmati  
illius Ordinis INSTITUTA ET PERPETRATA: ex va-  
riis Historiis, in primis vero Pontificiis collecta, Anno 1644.  
(a piece worth perusing) Or else will but cast their eyes  
upon our own forecited Statutes, and the \* Proclamations of  
Queen Elizabeth, King James, and King Charles against Je-  
suites, and Seminary Priests. *A brief Discovery of Doctor*  
*Allen: Sedition Drifts*, London 1588. *Charles Paget* (a  
Seminary Priest) his *Answer to Dolman*, concerning the  
succession of the English Crown, 1601. *William Watson*  
(a secular Priest) his *Dedacobdon or Quodlibets*, printed  
1602. now very well worthy all Protestants reading.  
*A Letter of A.C. to his Dis-Jesuited Kinsman*, concerning  
the Jesuites, London 1602. *Romish Positions and Practises*  
for Rebellion, London 1605. *The Arraignment of Tra-  
itors*, London 1605. *John King* Bishop of London, his  
Sermons on November 5. 1607, 1608. *King James* his  
*Conjuratio Sulphurea*, *Apologia pro Juramento fidelitatis*:  
& *Responsio ad Epistolam Cardinalis Peronii*. *An Exact*  
*Discovery of the chief Mysteryes of the Jesuitical iniquity*:  
and, *The Jesuites secret Consultations*; both printed Lon-  
don 1619. *William Crashaw his Jesuites Gospel*, London  
1621. *William Feake of the Doctrine and Practice of the*  
Society of Jesus, London 1630. The many printed  
Sermons of Doctor *John White*, Bishop *Lake*, Bishop  
*Andrews*, Doctor *Donne*, Doctor *Fearly*, Doctor *Clerk*,  
and others, preached on the fifth of November. *Lewis*  
*Owen*, his *Running Register*, London, 1620. His *Un-  
masking of all Popish Monkes and Jesuites*, 1628. And  
his *Jesuites Looking-Glaſs*, London, 1629. *John Gee*,  
his *Foot out of the Snare*, &c. London, 1624. with  
the *Jesuitical Plots* discovered in my *Romes Master-piece*;  
and, *Hidden works of darkness brought to publick Light*,  
London 1645. shall see the Jesuites and their Se-  
minaries charged with, convinced of, and condemned  
for these ensuing Seditions, Treasonable, Antimonar-  
chical, Anarchical Positions and Practises; for which,  
their

sita, Anti-Jesuſites, au Roy par. 1611. *Varia Doctorum Theologorum Theses aduersus quadam Jesuitica Dogmata.* The Remonſtrance of the Parliament of Paris to Henry the Great against the re-establiſhment of the Jesuſites; And their Cenſure of Mariana his book, to be publickly burnt, printed in French, 1610. recited in the General History of France, in Lewis 13. his life, & Peter Matthew, l. 6. par. 3. *Historia Francia. Varia Facultatis Thologiae & Curia Parisiensis, quam aliorum Opuscula, Decreta & Censura contra Jesuitas, Paris 1612.* Conradus Deckerus, *De proprietatis Iesuitarum, 1611.* *Quarellarum inclyti Regni Hungarie aduersus corruptelas Jesuiticas defensio.* Lucas Oſiander, his writing about the Jesuſites bloody Plot, Han. 1614. *Iesuitarum per unitas Belgii Provincias Negotiatio, Anno 1616.* Radulphus Hōppiniarus, *Historia Jesuitica, 1619.*

\* An Excellent 1616. Radulphus Hōppiniarus, *Historia Jesuitica, 1619.* Discovery of their detestable, treasonable Dablinis and nici, 1628. *Mercure Iesuite, in several Tomes, Geneve Practises.* 1626, *De Conscientia Iesuitarum, tractat. Censura sacra Theologiae Parisiensis, in librum qui inscribitur, Antonii Sanctarelli societatis Iesu, de Heresi, Schismate & Apostasia, &c. Paris, 1626.* Anti-Cotton; Ioannes Henricus, *De lib:ratio de compescendo perpetuo crudeli Contra Iesuitarum, Fran. 1633.* A Proclamation of the States of the united Provinces, Anno 1612. And another Proclamation of theirs: with two other Proclamations of the Protestant States of the Marquessate of M:avia, for the banishing of the Jesuſites, London 1629. Alfonſi de Vargas Tolezani, *Relatio ad Reges & Principes Christianos, De Stratagematis & Sophismatis Politicis Societatis Jesu, ad Monarchiam Orbis terrarum sibi conficiendam: in qua Iesuitarum erga Reges & Populos optimè de se meritos infidelitas, ergaq: ipsum Peccatum perfidia, contumacia, & IN FIDEI REBUS NOVANDI LIBIDO, illustribus documentis comprobatur, Anno 1641.* Jubileum, sive Speculum Jesuiticum, exhibens PRÆCIPUA JESUITARUM SCELERA, MOLITIONES, INNOVATIONES, FRAUDES, IMPOSTURAS, ET MENDACIA, CONTRA STATUM ECCLESI-

and all Zealous Protestant Freedmen of England.

CLESIASTICUM POLITICUM Q.UE, in & extra EUROPEUM ORBEM; primo hoc centenario, confirmati illius Ordinis INSTITUTA ET PERPETRATA: ex variis Historiis, in primis vero Pontificiis collecta, Anno 1644. (a piece worth perusing) Or else will but cast their eyes upon our own forecired Statutes, and the \* Proclamations of Queen Elizabeth, King James, and King Charles against Jesuites, and Seminary Priests. *A brief Discovery of Doctor Allen's Seditions Drift*, London 1588. *Charles Paget* (a Seminary Priest) his *Answer to Dolman*, concerning the succession of the English Crown, 1601. *William Watson* (a secular Priest) his *Dedacobdon or Quodlibets*, printed 1602. now very well worthy all Protestants reading. *A Letter of A.C. to his Dis-Jesuited Kinsman*, concerning the Jesuites, London 1602. *Romish Positions and Practises for Rebellion*, London 1605. *The Arraignment of Traitors*, London 1605. *John King* Bishop of London, his Sermons on November 5. 1607, 1608. *King James* his *Conjuratio Sulphurea, Apologia pro Juramento fidelitatis: &c, Responsio ad Epistolam Cardinallis Peronii*. *An Exact Discovery of the chief Mysteryes of the Jesuitical iniquity: and, The Jesuites secret Consultations*; both printed London 1619. *William Crashaw* his *Jesuites Gospel*, London 1621. *William Feake* of the *Doctrine and Practice of the Society of Jesus*, London 1630. The many printed Sermons of Doctor *John White*, Bishop *Lake*, Bishop *Andrews*, Doctor *Donne*, Doctor *Fearly*, Doctor *Clerk*, and others, preached on the fifth of November. *Lewis Owen*, his *Running Register*, London, 1620. His *Unmasking of all Popish Monkes and Jesuites*, 1628. And his *Jesuites Looking-Glais*, London, 1629. *John Gee*, his *Foot out of the Snare, &c.* London, 1624. with the *Jesuitical Plots* discovered in my *Romes Master-piece*; and, *Hidden works of darkness brought to publick Light*, London 1645. shall see the Jesuites and their Seminaries charged with, convinced of, and condemned for these ensuing Seditions, Treasonable, Antimonarchical, Anarchical Positions and Practises; for which,

their Society hath by publick Acts and Proclamations been several times banished out of *Hungaria, Bohemia, Moravia, Poland, the Low Countries, Rhettia, France, Transilvania, Sweden, Denmark, the Palatinate, Venice, Ethiopia, Japan and Turkey*, as well as out of *England, Scotland and Ireland*, as most iniufferable *Pests and Traytors*; in many of which they have yet gotten footing again.

1. That at least fifty several prime Authors of that infernal *Society of Jesu*. in several printed books (which you shall finde specified in Doctor John Whales Defence of the Way, c.6.10. *Aphorismi Jezuitarum: Jubileum*, or, *Speculum Jesuiticum*, p. 187, 188. and the Appendix to my *Fourth part of the Sovereign power of Parliaments*, p. 187, 188.) have dogmatically maintained; *That the Pope hath*

<sup>•</sup> *Hopinian.* <sup>His. Jezuit. 1.4.</sup> *absolute power, not only to excommunicate, but judicially to suspend, multe with temporal penalties, depose, derrone, pull down, and destroy any Christian Emperours, Kings, Princes, Potentates, by open Sentence, War, Force, secret Conspiracies, or private assassinias, and to give away their Crowns and Dominions to whoever will invale them, by Treason or Rebellion, at the Popes command; and that in cases of Heresie, Schism, Disobedience to, Rebellion against the Pope or See of Rome, Male-administration, refusal to defend the Pope or Church against her adversaries, Insufficiency to Govern, Negligence, Tyranny, Excesses, Abuses*

(m) *Quando in Government, Incorrigibility, Viciousness of Life, and (n)* *etrum malitia DECEDIDIP DF THE PUBLICK GODD,* *hoc exigit & DR. H. A. FELIP DF THE CHURCH,* *Reipub. vel Eccl. & CATEC DF GODD; as Antonius* *SITAS sic re-Santarellus the Jesuite particularly defines, in his* *spirit. Specu- Book De Haresibus, Schismatibus, &c. printed in Rome it* *lum Jesuiticum, self, Anno 1625. who affirms it to be, Multum aequum* *pa68, 169, 170. & Reipublice expediens, ut sit aliquis supremus Monarcha,* *ite, Part. I. p. qui Regum hujusmodi excessus possit corriger, & DE* *384, 385. 385. IUDICIAQ 393. 394. 395. 396. 397. 398; scit* *ALfonsi de Var-* *PELLEND concessa fuit facultas PUGICADI PAC-* *PA ZEPPOKALI, in eam, PACA PDK-* *1.53. ZEP.*

THE DICESAR PENDALED AND ALLEGED  
HIS CONNECEDACE OR CRESPLUM.

(Whether the Erection, Title of, or Proceedings against  
our beheaded King, in the late mis-named *High Courts of  
Justice*, had not their original from hence; and whe-  
ther the Army-Officers derived not their very phrase, (n)

of bringing the King TO JUSTICE, with their pre-  
tended **RECEHIBILY OF PUBLICH GODD**  
**AND DAGELY**, for it, from these very Jesuites, or  
their Agents in the Army; let themselves, the whole  
Kingdom, and all Wisemen now consider.) Moreover,

some of the fifty Authors, *LasCreswel*, or *Parsons* the English  
Jesuite, in his *Philopater*, Sect. 2. and *De Officio Principis  
Christiani*, chap. 3. affirm, That the whole School both of

(their) Divines and Lawyers, make it a Position certain and  
undoubtedly to be believed, That if any Christian Prince what-  
soever, shall manifestly turn from the Roman Catholick Reli-  
gion, or desire, or seek to reclaim others from the same; or  
but favour, or shew countenance to an Heretick (as they deem

all Protestants, and Dissenters from the See of Rome in any  
punctilio, such) HE PRESCARILY FALLETH  
FRMD, LODETH AL PRISCELLY POWER  
& Dignity; that By Virtute & Power Of THE LAW  
IT SELF, BOLD, DWISE AND VNGARE,

CHEP BEFORE APPREHESCE PRO-  
PDEPSED AGISPEL HIN BY THE SU-  
PHERS PAGON AND JUDGE. That thereby  
his Subjects are absolved from ALL DADDEN AND  
BODD OF ALLEGIAPEL TO HIM

AS TO THEIR LAWFUL PRINCE. Nay,  
THAT THEY MAY APP DUGEL  
(*PROVIDED THEY HAVE COPE-  
PELT POWER AND FORCE*) TO  
CATE OUT SUCH A PRINCE FROM  
BEARING RULLE APPDGET CHRISTI-

AND, as an Apostate, an Heretick, a Back-sider, a Re-  
volter from our Lord Jesus Christ, AND APP CRESPL  
TO HIS DMR CHATE AND CDP-

(n) See these  
Remonstrance  
from St. Albans,  
16 Nov. 1648.  
and Decem. 7.  
with other Pa-  
pers.

<sup>\* Attributed to  
the Jesuite  
Treswell.</sup>

\* See Watsons  
Quatibets, p.  
195. &c.

ODD&WICKEDLY; left perhaps he might infect others, or by his example or command, turn them from the faith. And that the Kingdom of such an Heretick or Prince, is to be bestowed at the pleasure of the Pope, with whom the people upon pain of Damnation, are to take part, and fight against their D<sup>W</sup>ICKED<sup>Y</sup>. Out of which detestible and Treasonable Conclusions, most Treasons and Rebellions of late time have risen in the Christian World; and the first smoke of the Gunpowder-treason too, as John Speed observes in his *History of Great Britain*, p. 1250. Whereupon the whole University of Paris censured them, An. 1625, and

\* Alfonsi de Vargas Relatio, &c. c. 55. Speculum Jesuisticum, p. 162, 163. not onely as most pernicious, detestable, damnable, erroneous, and perturbing the publick Peace; but likewise, as subversive of Kingdoms, States, and Republicks, seducing Subjects from their Obedience and subjection, and stirring them up to Wars, Factions, Seditions, & &c. parricidia, and the Butchers of their KINGD<sup>OM</sup>.

\* Hespinian. Hist. Jesuistica, l. 3. 2. That the Jesuites have frequently put these Treasonable, Seditious, Antimonarchical, Jesuitical, damnable Doctrines into practice, as well against some Popes, as against Protestant Kings, Queens, Princes, States: which they manifest,

(o) Hist. Gallia & Belgica, l. Navare, with a pair of deadly perfumed Gloves, onely for 1. p. 116. Speculum Jesuisticum favouring and protecting the Protestants in France against their violence, Anno 1572. p. 46.

Hespinian. Hist. Jesuistica, a Dominican Friar, to stab King Henry the third of France l. 3. 1. 59. in the belly with a poisoned Knife, whereof he presently di-

(p) See Speculum Jesuisticum ed. Anno 1589. for which they promised this Traitor, a and the General Sainthood in heaven. Pope Sixtus the fifth himself commanding this foul Fact in a long Oration to his Cardinals, as France in H. 3. Insigne & memorabile facinus, non sine Dei Opt. & Max.

Hespinian. Hist. Jesuistica, particulari providentia, & dispositione, ET SPIRITUS L. 3. f. 151, 152. SANCTI SUGGESTIONE DESIGNATUM:

facinusq; longe maius quam illud S. Judith, que Holofer-

(q) Speculum num & medio sustulit.

Jesuisticum, p.

75. 3. By (q) Committing the Jesuites publick justification of this

and all Zealous Protestants Freemen of England.

this *Clement* in a Sermon at *Paris* Anno 1593. wherein he not only extolled him above all the *Saints*, for his Treason against, and murder of *Henry* the 3. but broke out likewise into this further Exclamation to the people: *We ought to have some Ebud, whether it be a A Bonke, or A Bouldier, or a Varlet, or at least a Cow-herd. For it is necessary, that at least we should have some Ebud.* This one thing only get remains behinde: so then we shall compose all our Affairs very well, and at last bring them to a desired end. Whereupon, by the *Jesuites* instigation, the same yeer 1593. one *Peter Bariere*, undertook the assassination of King (r) *Henry the 4 of France*: which being prevented, and he executed, thereupon they suborned and enjoyned one of their own *Jesuitical Disciples*, *John Castle*, a youth of 19 years old, to *destroy the King*: who on the 27 of December 1594. in-  
tending to stab him to the heart, misfiling his aim, wounded him only in the cheek, and stroke out one of his teeth; for which Treasonable act he was justified, applauded, as a renowned *Saint and Martyr*, by the *Jesuites*, in a printed Book or two, published in commendation of this his undertaking. As namely, by *Bonarsius* the *Jesuite*, in his *Amphitheatrum, Franciscus Verona Constantinus* (a *Jesuite*) in his *Apologia pro Iohanne Castello, contra Edictum Parlamenti, & supplicium de eo ob Parricidium sumptum*, An. 1595. Where he thus writes of the attempt upon *Hen. 4.* Whoever diligently ponders, that *Henry* was excommunicated, an *Heretick*, relapsed, a profaner of holy things, a declared publick enemy, an oppressor of Religion; and (thereupon) a person secluded from all right to the Kingdom; and therefore a *Graunt*, not a *King*; an *Ulurper*, not a *lawful Lord*; he verily, unless he be mad, and destitute of humane sence, and love towards God, the *Church*, and his *Country*, cannot otherwise think or speak; but that the fact of *Castle* was generous, conjoined with *Mertne*, and *Heroical*, to be compared with the greatest and most praiseworthy facts which the ancient Monuments of *Sacred* and *Prophane* *Histories* have recorded. One thing only may be disliked, namely, That *Castle* hath not utterly slain and taken him from the middle of us.

In

(r) See the General History of France in the life of *Henry 4.* and *Louis 13.* *Spectulum Jesu-  
icum* 3. p. 77,  
80, 126, 235.  
*Hispian.*  
*Hil. Jesuitica,*  
1.3. p. 153, 10.

In sum; He denies this Henry to be any King of France, by right or inheritance, because, (in his and the Jesuites Opinion onely, not in Truth) he was both an Heretick, and a TYRANT. Asserting, That it was lawfull for Castle, or any other private man, **ED DODDRY A P** HENCLICK OR TYRANT, much more then, him that was both.

\* *Speculum Jesuiticum*, p. 80, item Colledge of Clarendon. In his Papers then seized 81. Hespinian, by, and reported to the Parliament of Paris, Anno Hist. Jesuitica, 1595. not onely compared Henry the third and fourth to Nero and Herod, and justified Clements murder of the one, and Castles attempt upon the other, as most Heroical and praise-worthy Actions: but likewise added, That if we in the year 1572. on Saint Bartholomews day, (in the General Massacre of the French Protestants) had **THE D F T H E B A D L E C O R T E S**, (Henry King of Navarre) we had not fallen out of a Feavour, into that Plague, which now we finde. *Sed quicquid delirant Reges pleniusq; Achiva, D A P C U I P I V A R C E P D D*. That King Henry should be but over-mildly dealt with, if he were thrust from the Crown of France, into a Monastery, and there had his crown shaven. That if he could not be deposed without a war, then a war was to be raised against him: but if a war could not be levied against him, the cause being dead, **C L A S S E M C D I D T D E L A T U R**: he should then be privily murdered and taken out of the way. For which the Parliament of Paris adjudged and executed him for a Traitor. Yea, so desperately were the Jesuites after this, bent to destroy this King, that *Alexander Hay* (a Scottish Jesuite of Clarendon,) privy to Castles villany, used to say, That if King Henry the fourth should pass by their Colledge (the first there built for them) he would willingly cast himself out of his window headlong upon him, so as he might break the Kings neck, though thereby he brake his own. Yet was he punished but with perpetual Banishment. After which Jesuitical conspiracies dexterit and prevented, notwithstanding this King Henry (before these

\* *Hespinian. Hist. Jesu. 13. 157, 158.*

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

these two attemptes to murder him) had by their solicitations, renounced the Protestant Religion, professed himself a zealous Romanist, recalled the Jesuites formerly banished for the murder of Henry the third, against his Parliaments and Counsels advice, reversed all the decrees of Parliament against them, razed the publick Pillar set up in Paris, as a lasting Monument of their Treasons and Conspiracies; built them a magnificent Colledge in Paris, indowes them with a very large Revenue; entertained Pere Cotten (one of their Society) for his Confessor (who revealed all his Secrets to the King of Spain;) bequeathed a large Legacy of Plate and Lands to their Society by his will, and was extraordinary bountiful and favourable towards them; yet these bloody ingrateful Villains, animated that desperate wretch, <sup>See the Gene-</sup> Ravilliac, to stab him to death in the open street in Paris, Anno 1610. <sup>ral History of France in Hen.</sup> Albigni the Jesuite being privy to this murder, before it was perpetrated. Yea, Francis de Verona in his *Apology* <sup>4. and Lewis 13. Dr. John Whites De-</sup> for John Castle, p. 258. thus predicted his second mortal <sup>Wrys. 10. p. 46.</sup> stab, in these words, Though this Prince of Orange escaped <sup>since of the</sup> the first blow, given him in his cheek, yet the next hit, where- <sup>of this was a presage; as the blow given by Castle</sup> ~~WALL~~ <sup>the Netherlands</sup> ~~BE THE FORE-RUINER OF AND EVER BLOW.~~ Such implacable Regicides are the Jesuites.

4. By their suborning, instigating sundry bloody instruments one after another, to murder (1) William Prince of Orange, prevented in their attempts by God's providence, till at last they procured one Balthasar Gerard to shoot him to death with a Pistol, charged with three Bullets, An. 1584. the Jesuites promising him no less then ~~WEA~~ <sup>(1) See Grim-  
fions History of the Netherlands p. 764. Thimus l. 79. p. 186. Spec-  
cum. Jesuiti-  
cum. p. 60. 61.</sup> ~~WEA~~ it self, AND A CAPITALIZAD<sup>DP</sup> <sup>cum. p. 60. 61.</sup> AND THE SAIPED AND MARTYR<sup>DP</sup>, for this bloody Treason, as they did to James Clement before, for murdering the French King. And it is very remarkable, That after this murder of his, <sup>Thomas</sup> De Moerath. Campanelli (2) Jesuited Italian Frier) prescribed this as a principal means to the King of Spain of reducing the <sup>Hisp. 1. 27. p. 258.</sup> Netherlands under his Monarchy again, to sow emulation and

and discords amongst their Nobles, States, and to murder Prince Maurice his son and successor, which he expresseth in these direct termes. *Maxime opus est, ut Serpens seditionis, Comes* *Velicit Mauritius Intimidatur; non vero per bellum di-*

*\* Chron. Belgiae copia illi danda est, magis magisq; succrescendi which*  
Tom. 1. p. 719. *they \* twice likewise attempted to affect; An. 1594, and*  
Tom. 2. p. 97. 1598. *No wonder that they so much endeavour by all*  
*Meteranus l.* *means & instruments to suppress that noble family now, to*  
17. p. 575. *whom the Netherlands principally owe their infranchise-*  
*Hofmian.* *ment from the Spanish yoke of bondage.*

*Hiſt. Jesuitica,* 1.3. f. 205. 5. By (t) their poſoning Stephen Bozckay Prince of Tran-  
(t) *Speculum* *ſylvanic,* p. 127. for oppoſing their bloody perſecution.

6. By their manifold bloody Plots and Attempts from  
(v) See Speed time to time, to murder, depose, stab, poſon, deſtroy our famous  
and Cambden Protestant Queen Elizabeth, by open Insurrections, Rebellions,  
in her life. Bi-  
shop Carletons Invasions, Wars, raised against her both in England and Ire-  
land; and by intestine clandestine Conjurations; from which  
Membrance of Gods ever-waking providence did preserve her. Amongſt

Gods Mercy, other Conspiracies, that of Patrick Cullen, an Irish Frier,  
London 1624. (hired by the Jesuites and their Agents to kill the Queen)

(x) Hofmian. *Hiſt. Jesuitica,* is observable. (x) Hol the Jesuite, (who perſuaded  
Speeds Hiſtory, him to undertake the murdering of her) told him, that  
p. 1181. Camb- it was not onely lawfull by the Laws, but that he ſhould merit  
den, Stow, Ho- Gods Favour, and Heaven by it; and thereupon gave him  
linded in the remiſſion of all his ſins, & the Eucharift, to encourage him  
Life of Queen in this Treafon; the chief ground whereof (and of all  
Elizabeth. Spec- their other Treafons againſt this Queen) was thus openly  
cūm, p. 73. expreſſed by Iaqnis Francis, for Cullens further encourage-  
ment; That the Reaſon of England, then was and would  
be ſo well ſetlēd, that unleſs Miftris Elizabeth (ſo he termed  
his Dread Sovereign, though but a base Landreſſon;) were  
ſuddenly taken away, All the Devils in Hell would not be  
able to prevail, to shake and overturn it. Which then it

\* See waſtions Quodlibets. ſeems they \* principally endeavoured, and oft-times  
ſince attempted, and have now at laſt effected, by thofe  
who conceir they demerit the Title of Saints (thoſe not  
in a Romiſh Kalender) and no leſs then Heaven, for shaking,  
overturning, and making it No Kingdoms.

7. By their (y) Conspiracy against King James, to de-  
pive him of his Rights to the Crown of England, imprison, or  
destroy his person: raise Rebellion, alter Religion, and Sub-  
vert the State and Government; by vertue of Pope (y) See Speeches  
John Sloane, and  
Hist. P. 1140.  
1243, 1243.  
Hom. 1. Iac.

Clement the eighth his Bull directed to *Henry Garnet*, Superior of the Jesuites in England: whereby he com-  
manded all the Archpriests, Priests, Popish Clergy, Peers, No-  
bility and Catholicks of England, That after the death of  
Queen Elizabeth by the course of Nature, or otherwise, who-  
soever shall lay claim or title to the Crown of England, (though  
never so directly or nearely interestred by descent) should not be  
admitted unto the Throne, unless he would first tolerate the Ro-  
mish Religion, and by his best endeavours promote the Catho-  
lick cause; unto which by his Solemn and Sacred Oath he  
should religiously subscribe, after the death of that miserable  
woman; (as he stilled Queen Elizabeth.) By vertue of which  
Bull, the Jesuites, after her decease, dissuaded the Romish-  
minded Subjects, from yielding in any wise obedience to King  
James, as their Sovereign; and entred into a Treasonable  
Conspiracy with the Lord Cobham, Lord Gray, and others, a-  
gainst him, to imprison him for the ends aforesaid; or  
destroy him: pretending that King James was no King at all  
before his Coronation; and that therefore they might by force  
of Arms, lawfully surprise his person, and Prince Henry his  
Son, and imprison them in the Tower of London, or Dover-  
Castle, till they inforced them by durest, to grant a free tolera-  
tion of their Catholick Religion, to remove some evil Counsellors  
from about them, and to grant them a free Pardon for this  
violence; or else they would put some further project in ex-  
ecution against them, to their destruction. But this Conspira-  
tory being discovered, The Traitors were apprehended, ar-  
raigned, condemned, and Watson and Clerk (two Jesuited  
Priests who had drawn them into this Conspiracy, upon the  
aforesaid Pretext) with some others, executed as Traitors;  
(z) all the Judges of England resolving, that King James be-  
ing right Heir to the Crown by descent, was immediately upon (z) Cooks Indi-  
cates, v. 1. and  
the death of Queen Elizabeth, actually possessed of the Crown, Calves Case 7.  
and Lawful King of England, before any Proclamation or Co- Reports of 10, 11.  
1. Iac. v. 1.

and discords amongst their Nobles, States, and to murder Prince Maurice his son and successor, which he expresteth in these direct termes. *Marime opus est, ut Serpens seditionis, Comes scilicet Mauritius Intestinatur; non vero per bellum diu-*

\* *Chron. Belgiae turnum, copia illi danda est, magis magisq; succrescendi* which Tom. 1. p. 719. they \* twice likwise attempted to affect; An. 1594, and Tom. 2. p. 97. 1598. No wonder that they so much endeavour by all means & instruments to suppress that noble family now, to whom the *Netherlands* principally owe their *infranchise-ment* from the Spanish yoke of bondage.

1.3. f.205.

5. By (t) their *poysoning* Stephen Botzay Prince of Trans-

(t) *Speculum sylvanicum*, for opposing their bloody *persecution*.

137.

(v) See Speed *time to time*, to murder, depose, stab, poyson, destroy our famous and Cambden Protestant Queen Elizabeth, by open *Insurrections*, *Rebellions*, in her life. *Bi-  
loop Carletons*, *Invasions*, *Wars*, raised against her both in England and Ire-  
land; and by intestine clandestine *Conjurations*; from which

Membrance of Gods ever-waking providence did preserve her. Amongst Gods Mercy, other *Conspiracies*, that of *Patrick Cullen*, an Irish Friar, London 1624.

(x) *Hoffmian*, (hired by the *Jesuites* and their Agents to kill the Queen) *Hilf Jesuitica*, is observable. (x) *Hilf the Jesuite*, (who periwaded Speeds *History*, him to undertake the *murdering* of her) told him, that p. 2181. Camb. it was not onely lawful by the Laws, but that he should merit den, *Stow, Ho-  
liffed in the* Gods Favour, and Heaven by it; and thereupon gave him *Life of Queen* remission of all his sins, & the Eucharist, to encourage him Elizabeth. *Spec-  
culum Jesuiti-  
cum*, p. 73.

expressed by *Iaquis Francis* for *Cullen* further encouragement; That the *Realm* of England, then was and would be so well setlo, that unless *Mistress Elizabeth* (so he termed his Dread Sovereign, though but a base *Landrefson*;) were suddenly taken away, All the Devils in Hell would not be able to prevail, to shake and overturn it. Which then it

seems they \* principally endeavoured, and oft-times since attempted, and have now at last effected, by those who conceit they demerit the Title of *Saints* (though not in a *Romish Kalender*) and no les then *Heaven*, for shaking, overturning, and making it *No Kingdom*.

\* See *Watson*  
*Quodlibets*.

7. By their (y) Conspiracy against King James, to deprive him of his Rights to the Crown of England, imprison, or destroy his person: raise Rebellion, alter Religion, and subvert the State and Government; by virtue of Pope Clement the eighth his Bull directed to Henry Garnet, Superior of the Jesuits in England: whereby he commanded all the Archpriests, Priests, Popish Clergy, Peers, Nobles and Catholicks of England, That after the death of Queen Elizabeth by the course of Nature, or otherwise, whoever shall lay claim or title to the Crown of England, (though never so directly or nearly interested by descent) should not be admitted unto the Throne, unless he would first tolerate the Romish Religion, and by his best endeavours promote the Catholick cause; unto which by his Solemn and Sacred Oath he should religiously subscribe, after the death of that miserable woman; (as he stiled Queen Elizabeth.) By virtue of which Bull, the Jesuits, after her decease, dissuaded the Romish-minded Subjects, from yielding in any wise obedience to King James, as their Sovereign; and entered into a Treasonable Conspiracy with the Lord Cobham, Lord Gray, and others, against him, to imprison him for the ends aforesaid; or destroy him: pretending that King James was no King at all before his Coronation; and that therefore they might by force of Arms, lawfully surprise his person, and Prince Henry his Son, and imprison them in the Tower of London, or Dover-Castle, till they enforced them by duress, to grant a free toleration of their Catholick Religion, to remove some evil Counsellors from about them, and to grant them a free Pardon for this violence; or else they would put some further project in execution against them, to their destruction. But this Conspiracy being discovered, The Traitors were apprehended, arraigned, condemned, and Watson and Clerk (two Jesuit Priests who had drawn them into this Conspiracy, upon the aforesaid Pretext) with some others, executed as Traitors;

(z) all the Judges of England resolving, that King James being (z) Cook's In-  
heriting right Heir to the Crown by descent, was immediately upon Queen Elizabeth's death, actually possessed of the Crown, Calvin's Case 7; and Lawful King of England, before any Proclamation or Co- Report of 10, 11.  
1 Jas. c. 1.

ration of him, which are but Ceremonies, (as was  
\* See Fox, Ho. formerly adjudged in the case of \* Queen Mary, and  
lunfed, Speeds, Queed Jane, 1 Maria) there being no Interregnum  
3 Maria, by the Law of ENGLAND, as is adjudged, de-  
clared by Act of Parliament, 1 Jac.c.1. worthy serious  
perusal.

8. By their (a) horrid Gun-powder Treason Plot; con-  
(a) See 3 Jas. trived, fomented, by G. irnet (Superior of the English Je-  
c. 1, 2, 4, 6. suites) Gerard, Tensmod and other Jesuites; who by their A-  
Speeds History, p. 1250, 1256. postolical power, did not onely commend, but absolve from all  
The Arraign- sin the other Jesuited Popish Conspirators, and Faux The-  
tors, with others. sculder, who were their instruments to effect it.  
Prayers for the Yea, the Jesuitical Priests were so Atheistical, as that they  
5 of November, usually concluded their Masses with Prayers, for the good  
Hospitall. succels of this hellish Plot, which was, suddenly, with no less  
Jesuitica 1.3. then 36 Barrels of Gunpowder, placed in a secret Vault under  
f. 163, 16 170. the House of Lords, to have blown up and destroyed at once,  
King James himself, the Queen, Prince, Lords Spirituall and  
Temporal, with the Commons assembled together in the Upper-  
House of Parliament, upon the 5 of November, Anno Dom.  
1605. and then forcibly to have seised with armed men pre-  
pared for that purpose, the persons of our late beheaded King,  
then Duke of York, and of the Lady Elizabeth his Sister (if  
absent from the Parliament, and not there destroyed with the  
rest) that so there might be none of the Royal Line left to inhe-  
rit the Crown of England, Scotland and Ireland; to the utter  
overthrow and subversion of the whole Royal Family, Parlia-  
ment, State and Government of this Realm. Which unpa-  
ralleld, inhumane, bloody Plot, being miraculously dis-  
covered, prevented, the very day before its execution,  
in perpetual detestation of it, and of the Jesuites and their  
traitorous Romish Religion, (which both contrived and  
approved it) the 5 day of November, by the Statute of  
3 Jacobi, ch. 1. was enacted to be had in perpetual Re-  
membrance, that all Ages to come, might thereon meet  
together publickly shroughout the whole Nation, to render  
publick praises unto God, for preventing this infernal Jesuitical  
Design, and keep in memory this joyful Day of Deliver-  
ance;

rates ; for which end, special forms of publick Prayers and Thankesgivings were then appointed, and that Day ever since more or less annually observed, till this present. And it is worthy special observation, that had this Plot taken effect, (b) It was agreed by the Jesuites and Popish Conspira-

(b) *Speeds Hisp.* *Arrangement of  
Treasons, and  
History of the  
Gunpowder  
Treason.*

tors before-hand, That the Imputation of this Treason p. 1142. The  
Should be cast upon the Puritans, to make them noje *De* vious : as now they father all the Powder-Plots of this kinde, which they have not onely laid, but fully accomplished of late yeers against the King, Prince, Royal  
Potterity, the Lords and Commons House, our old English  
Parliaments and Government, upon those Independents, and Anabaptistical Sword-men, (whom they now  
repute and stile, <sup>the most reformed</sup> PURITANS,) who were in truth, but their meer under-Instruments to effect his Victory of  
them ; When as they (c) originally laid the Plots ; as is clear by *Campanella's Book, De Monarchia Hisp.* ch. 25. and *Cardinal Richelieu* his *Instructions* at his death, to the King of France. And it is very observable, that as Courtney the Jesuite, Rector of the English Jesuites Colledge at Rome did in the year 1641. (when the name of Independents, was scarce heard of in England) openly affirm to some English Gentlemen, and a Reverend Minister (of late in Cornwall) from whom I had this Relation, then and there feasted by the English Jesuites in their Colledge, That now at last, after all their former Plots had miscarried, they had found out a sure way to subvert and ruine the Church of England (which was most formidable to them of all others) by the Independents ; who immediately after (by the Jesuites clandestine assistance) infinitely encreased, supplant the Presbyterians by degrees, got the whole power of the Army, (and by it, of the Kingdom) into their hands, & then subverted both the Presbyterian Government and Church of England in a great measure, with the Parliament, King and his Posterity ; as *Monsieur Miliere* a Jesuited French-Papist observes. So some Independent Ministers, Sectaries and Anabaptists, ever since 1648. have neglected the observation of the fifth of November, 26, 27.

*See Militiere  
Tribus, 1654.  
dedicated to the  
King of Great  
Britain.*

*(c) See my E-  
pistles to Jus-  
Patronus,  
and Speech in  
Parliament.*

Notes.

*In his Victory  
of Truth, 1654.*

*p. 15, 18, 24, 25,*

*26, 27.*

(as I am credibly informed) and refused to render publick thanks to God for the deliverance thereon, contrary to the *Act*, for this very reason, which some of them have rendered; *That they would not mock God in publick by praising him for delivering the late King, Royal Posterity, and Houſe of Lords from destruction then, by Jesuites and Papists, when as themselves have ſince destroyed and ſubverted them through Gods Providence; and repute it a ſpeciall mercy and deliverance to the Nation from Tyranny and Bondage, for*

*\* Upon which \* which they have cauſe to bleſs the Lord: Performing that ground, many of for the Jesuites and Powder-Traytors, which themſelves ſolemniſed the 30 of January, to conſider, how much they acted the Jesuites, and instead of No- promoted their very worſt Designes againſt us there- w이며 5. in; what \* infamy and ſcandal they have thereby drawn upon all zealous Profefſors of our Prote- Truth, p. 41050. ſtant Religion, and \* what will they do in the end there- \* Jer. 5. 31. of?*

9. (To omit all other Forraign instances cited in *Speculum Iſuíticum*, p. 124, 10 130. where you may perufe them at leiuſe) By (d) their poſſoning King James himſelf in concluſion, as ſome of them have boasted.

(d) *Romes Master-piece*, p. 8, 18, 19. 10. By the Popes Numio's, and a *Conclave of Jesuites Con-spiracy at London*, Anno 1640. \* to poſſon our late King Charles himſelf, (as they had poſſoned his Father) with a poſſoned Indian Nut, kept by the Jesuites, and ſhewed often by Conne the Popes Numio to the Discoverer of that Plot; or else, to deſtroy him by the Scotifh wars and troublies, (raifed for that very end by the Jesuites,) in caſe he refuſed to grant them a universal liberty of exerciſing their Popiſh Religion throughout his Realms and Dominiſions: and then to train up his Son under them, in the Popiſh Religion; To which not onely heretofore, but now likewiſe they ſtrenuously en- deavour by all poſſible means to ſeduce him; as appears more especially by *Monsieur Milſiere* his (e) late book dedicated to *Him* for that purpoſe, to invite him to the Roman Catholick Faith. Surely all theſe premiſed instances compared together, and with that memo- rable

(c) *The V. Choy of Truth*, ANNO 1653.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

table passage of the English Jesuite <sup>\*</sup>Campion, in his *Concertatio Ecclesiæ Catholice*: ( or *Epistle to Queen Elizabeths Council.*) *Treviri* 1583. p. 22. *Velim sciatis, quod* <sup>\* Hophinian.</sup> *ad Societatem nostram attinet, omnes nos, qui per totum* <sup>His. Jesuistica,</sup> *ad 1.3. t. 21. 4. 1.4.* <sup>l. 264.</sup>

*Obiueni longe lateque diffusi sunt, quarum est continua successio, & magnus numerus, Sanctum foedus inisse, nec quamdiu unus nostrum supererit, studium, & consilia nostra intermissuros, ad Reges Hereticos quovis modo tolleados* (as Hophinian relates, and expounds his words and meaning) *& Religionem vestram extinguiere. Iampridem jacta est ratio, & inchoatum certamen nulla vis, nullum Anglorum impetu superabit; so as to hinder this their holy League and Covenant long since entered into, To destroy, take out of the way, ruine all Protestant Kings throughout the World, under the Notion of Hereticks by any means whatsoever, ( and the Protestant Religion together with them.)* With a <sup>\*</sup> Copy of a Letter sent by an Independent Agent from Paris, some few weeks before the Kings removal from the Isle of *Wright*, by the Army-Officers, declaring the Jesuites implacable Enmity to the King, and to hereditary Monarchy throughout the World. And an Express sent from Paris to the King himself, some three days before his seizure and translation from *Wright*, to this effect, ( as I have heard from persons of Honour) That the Jesuites at a general meeting in France, had resolved, by the power of their friends in England, to seize on his Majesty, bring him to justice, and cut off his head, because he had, contrary to their expectation, closed with the Parliament <sup>(to the abolishing of Episcopacy, and)</sup> to five new Bills against Jesuites, Popish Priests, Mass, Popery, and all Popish Ceremonies, in the last Treaty; and advising Him, to prepare for this new storm, which within few days after fell upon him: will sufficiently inform the world, that the late unparalleled capital proceedings against our Protestant King, (contrary to the Votes of both Houses of Parliament) the Parliament Members, Peers House, and forced, dissolved late Parliament too, <sup>"proceeded not</sup> from the Principles of our reformed Protestant Religion, as this (f) Monsieur in his printed Pamphlet, would make &c.

<sup>\* Printed by it self, and at the end of my speech in Parliament.</sup>

<sup>\* See An Apologetical Declaration of the Province of London, &c. Jan. 24. 1649.</sup>

<sup>(f) Page 5, 7, 8, 18, 33, 39, &c.</sup>

his

his Reader, the young King to whom he dedicates it, and all the World believe ; but from the *Popes* and *Jesuites* forecited *Treasonable Opinions*, seconded with their clandestine *Solicitations* and *Practices* : and that they, with some *French Cardinals*, *Jesuites*, as well as *Spanijh* and *English*, (then present in *England* to promote their Designes) were the chief original *Contrivers*, *Promoters* of them, whoever were the immediate visible *Instruments*, as I

(g) See my Speech in *Parliament*, and *Memorandum* to my *Jesuites* *Patronatus*, & *Thos. Campanella De Monarchia Hisp. c. 25.* wiping off this Scandal from our reformed *Religion*, & the sincere Professors of it, who both abominated and <sup>pre-</sup>*testified* against it in print. 4. *Radolphus Hespinian* in his excellent *Historia Jesuicata*, 14. f. 244, 245. reckons up these three prime causes of the *Jesuites Regicides*, & other *Noorious Treasons*. The first is, *that blinde Obedience*, which they vow to their *Superiors*, to execute with great celerity, spiritual joy, and perseverance, whatever their *Superiors* command. Item shall enjoyne them, by being persuaded, That all their *Censors*, *Land - Ministers* and others, Re- presentation to the General, governed by *Divine Providence*, (a word now most in use and the second part of the *History of Independency*, with our *Army - Saints*, and *Soldiers*, wholly infected with this *Jesuitical Doctrine* of *Obedience*) by their *Superiors*, whithersoever they shall suffer themselves to be carried, or in what sort soever they shall be dealt with by them, (like a staffe in the hand of a man, which readily obeys him that holds it, wheresoever and in what thing soever he will please to use it) especially when backed with a pretext of *Presses*, *Religious Safety*, *Publick Good*, *Exemplary Justice*, and promoting the common Cause for which their Society was first instituted. 2. That they hold themselves obliged to no *Kings*, *Princes*, or *Civil Magistrates* by any *Oath of Allegiance*, but only to the *Pope* and their *Generals* ; and therefore think themselves free and unable to commit any *Treason* at all against them, although at the *Pope's* and their *Superiors* commands they still rise up against, murder, and destroy them. 3. That they deem those *Kings*, *Princes*, which the *Pope* and *Jesuites*, or

"To their Generals, in the hand of a man, which readily obeys him that holds it, wheresoever and in what thing soever he will please to use it) especially when backed with a pretext of *Presses*, *Religious Safety*, *Publick Good*, *Exemplary Justice*, and promoting the common Cause for which their Society was first instituted. 2. That they hold themselves obliged to no *Kings*, *Princes*, or *Civil Magistrates* by any *Oath of Allegiance*, but only to the *Pope* and their *Generals* ; and therefore think themselves free and unable to commit any *Treason* at all against them, although at the *Pope's* and their *Superiors* commands they still rise up against, murder, and destroy them. 3. That they deem those *Kings*, *Princes*, which the *Pope* and *Jesuites*, or

other learned men of their Religion, or the common people shall deem Hereticks, to be thereby wholly made incapable of any Empires, Kingdoms, or Principalities, or any other civil Dignity; yea, to be accursed Tyrants, unworthy of the name of Kings; that whereby their Subjects are totally absolved from the bond of Allegiance to them; and that thereupon it is lawful to kill and destroy them, and the murders of such are meritorious. Now that these three Jesuitical Grounds and Principles, (infused into our Army-Officers and Soldiers by the Jesuits and their Instruments of late yeers, against their Primitive Orthodox Positions, Protestations, Declarations, Oaths, Covenants, Engagements) backed with secret Avarice, Ambition, and Self-ends, were the principal impulsive Causes of all the extravagant violent Proceedings both against the late King, and Parliament (not the loyal Principles of the Protestant Religion) is apparent unto all the World, by the Armies own Declarations of Nov. 16. and Decemb. 7. 1648. Their True State of the Commonwealth of England, &c. 1654. and other Pamphlets for their justification, which all true Protestants blush at. \*

3. That the Jesuits ever since the Establishment of their Military Order, under Ignatius their Martial General, have been the principal Firebrands, Bellows, Instruments of kindling, fomenting, raising, continuing all the publick commotions, wars, seditions and bloody feuds that have happened in or between any Kings, Kingdoms, States, Princes, Sovereigns or Subjects throughout the Christian world; and more particularly, of all the Civil commotions, wars in France, Germany, Transylvania, Bohemia, Hungary, Russia, Poland, England, Scotland and Ireland, to the effusion of whole Oceans of Christian blood: which one poetically thus expresseth,

(b) *Quicquid in Orbe nati passim percantur gradibus,*

*Quicquid turbarum tempora nostra vident,*

*Cuncta Sodalitio mentito Nominis Iesu*

*Accepta Historia teste, referre licet.*

(b) *Jubilatum,*

*five Speculum*

*Jesuiticum Epis-*

*gramma.*

Ita modo & usq[ue]a celebrare Encanis Sella,  
Silitis inventum, Loislana cohors.

Yea, it is well worthy observation, what *Jacobus Cruncius*, a *Jesuite* (Rector of the *Jesuites* Novices at *Landsberge*) presumed to publish, in his *Explication of the Rules of the Jesuites*, Anno 1584. in these words: *The Father of our Society ought to be a Souldier*; because, as it is the part of a Souldier, to rush upon the *Enemy* with all his Forces, and not to desist, till he become a Conquerour; so it is our duty to run violently upon all, who resist the *Pope of Rome*; and to Destroy and Abolish them, not onely with *Counsels*, *Writings*, and *Words*; *Sed invocato etiam brachio seculari*, *Igne & Ferro tollere & abolere*, *sicut Pontifex & nostra Vota* (*contra Luciferanos suscepta*) *Volunt & Mandant*. But likewise by calling in to our assistance the *secular Arm* (of an Army) to take away, and destroy them with *Fire* and *Sword*, as the *Pope* and our *Warden* (taken against the *Protestants*) *Will and Command*. And may we not then safely conclude, they have been the *Original Contrivers, Fomenters, Continuers of all our late intestine and forraign wars, by Land and Sea, with our Christian Protestant*

(k) *Excell Col-Bretbren and Albyes*, (as (k) *sundry Parliament Declarations* *lection*, p. 12. 10 of both *Houses* aver and attest?) And that many of them 20. 97, 98, 106, 108, 207, 463, 10. 463, 491, 491, 498, 508, 574, 616, 631, 10. 638, 660, 10. 670, 812, 16, 818, 832, 834, 849, 890, 10. 918, 651, 652, 653. perpetuate our *Civil Wars*? And so much the rather, because, (a) *Alphonso de Vargas* (a Spanish Popish Priest) informs us: *That the Jesuites, being a Generation of Incendiaries*, are so well pleased with the name of their Founder 918, 651, 652, *Ignatius*, derived from *Fire*, and signifying a *Caster about* *of wild fire*, or an *Incendiary*; *that though his christened* *name at first was Iniclus, or Inighistas*; *Yet Iohannes Ense & Sophis Ensis bins Norenberger*, a *Jesuite*, in his Book, *De Vita Ignatii, Jesuitarum*, c. printed at *Madrid*, 1630. most falsely records, *That his* 4, 6, 7. *Parents at his Baptism*, *being in doubt what name to give* *him*, *therenpon the Infant himself, with a loud voice*, *said*,

He would be named Ignatius, to signify what office he should obtain in the Church and world, even to cast abroad fire in them, and set them all in a flame. Hereupon his Disciples the Jesuites, considering that this their founder was by his name A firebrand, and a Troubador by his profession, professed publickly to the King of Spain, his council and the world, that it was no less consonant to the mind, institution and staines, then to the name of their warlike Father Ignatius, that they should not only exercise, but Publickly profess and teach to others, Artem Pyrotechnicam, &c. the art how to make and cast abroad fire-balls, fire-work, and wild-fire, to fire and burn houses and Cities: and likewise the art of warre, of setting Armies in battell array, of Assaulting cities, the maner of making Gun-powder, bullets, fire-balls; of casting Tuns, and the maner and wayes of making all other Military works, Enginges, together with rules and precepts belonging to Navigation, & omnia maritimi belli munia: and all datus and incidentis belonging to Sea-fights. Upon which they perswaded the King of Spain (notwithstanding the opposition of all the Universities of Spain against it) to erect a publike University for their fiery martiall order at Madrid, and to endow it with an annual Revenue of ten thousand Crownes; wherein they set up a publike Lecture concerning war and all incidentis appertaining therin; with this Printed title: *Acroasis. De re Militari; in qua praecepunt Doctrina & forma Militiarum veterarum & modernarum, & Species Mathematicum arti isti subordinatarum: que sunt Tattica, sive De Actie instruenda, Topographica, Machinaria Militaria, Organo Poetica, Pyrotechnica, &c. Hanc auctorisa faciet, P. Hermannus Hago (a Jesuit) quarta pomeridiana usque ad quintam.* This is the first publike Military Lecture I ever read of erected in any University amongst Christians, and Professors of the (a) Gospel of peace; who are expressly en- (a) Rom. 10.15  
joyned by the (b) God of peace, and Prince (c) of peace (d) (b) Rom. 15.33  
To put up their swords into their scabberds; because all those that (c) Isai. 9.6.  
take the sword, shall perish with the sword. (e) To beat their (d) Mat. 26.52.  
swords into plow-sharets, and their spears into pruning-hookes: (e) Isai. 3.4.  
not to lift up the sword against one another, neither (f) Mica. 4.3.

learne war any more. Yet such bloody incendiaries and delighters in war are the Jesuites, that they thus publicly teach others the art of war and fire-works, to set the whole Christian world in combustions and open warres against each other; which they have everywhere accomplished, and that upon this accownt: that the Gospel of Jesus is principally to be taught and propagated by armed power, exercitu & armorum usu; by an army and the use of arms (whereby they now propagate it in our Kingdomes the quite contrary way, to the ruine of our Church and religion) whereupon (f) Vargas passeth this just censure on them: *Hos velut Ignigenos illi Comici verbis replea quis a se amoliri, & in malorum rebus abire jussit.*

(f) Cap. 7. p. 47  
and c. 23. p.  
132.

*Apage illum a me; nam ille quidem Vulcani irati est filius.  
Qua tangit, Omne ambovit; si prope abstes, calofacit.*

And a German Frier in his *Astrum inextinctum*, gives this true Character of them: *Discordias inter supra-  
Republica Christiana capita seminarie credimus esse veritati  
patrocinari; quam salvum esse negant, quondam Principes  
sibi inter se non colliduntur. Hoc est flammam in Europa suscitare,  
sicut gloriabantur Patrem societatis Ignatium, esse illum, de quo  
Christus dixit, Meni ignem militare in terram, hoc est, claf-  
fum in aula, Principum camera, & illos inter se committere.*

4. That the (g) Jesuites from the first erection of their Military order, have conspired, attempted to subvert and utterly extirpate (under the name of Schismatickes, Hereticks, Gospellers, Heresie, and the Gospel) all professors whatsoever of the Protestant Religion and their Doctrines throughout the world, not only by Machivillian plots and treasons, but by war, fire, sword, holy leagues, Armies & armed power, as is evident both by their booke and Practices. To instance in a few particulars both abroad and at home. Franciscus Veronae Confamienſis, a Jesuite, in his *Apology for John Castle*, anno 1595. part 3. c. 13. resolves, *That all wars to extirpate hereticks (Protestants) are lawfull, yea more lawfull than against*

(g) See Hoshi-  
man. Historia  
Jesuitica. 1. 4.  
f. 212, 213,  
214. and 1. 3.  
throughout. Thu-  
anus His. 1. 4.

against all other Infidels, because Heresie according to Gods word, is worse than all Infidelity. And if war be just against Hereticks, how much more just is it against the head of the Hereticks? And if it be just to extirpate heretics, call Kings out of all Christian Kingdoms (which the Jesuites entered into an holy League to effect, as you heard before out of Campion) how much more just is it in the whole Christian Kingdom (France) to root out King Henry the 4? (Whom they not onely warred against, but stabbed and murdered as aforesaid.) (b) *Thuanus* (h) Geneve, Historie, l.65. p 238. and lib.67. 299. records; That it 1620.

is the opinion and Sentence of the Jesuites, that it is a Pious and wholesome thing, that all Christians should lay violent hands upon Sectaries and Protestants, ought to be armed against them, and to make no peace, keep no faith nor truce with them; yea, that it would be more profitable for the Church, and more conducing to Gods glory, for all Christians to give over their wars they wage against the Turks by common consent, and to let the Turks alone, and to turn all their arms and forces against the Evangelical Sectaries (or Protestants) which live amongst them, who are wiser, and ought to be more odious to true Christians than Turks; and <sup>strictly to</sup> destroy and persecute them to death, rather than to delere <sup>the</sup> these unbelieving Mahometans, who are not so dangerous as they. *Hoc quam pie, et iusta mansuetudinem Christianam dicatur,* ipsi qui conscientias alborum moderantur, conscientiam suam rogant; Subjoynes Thuanus, though a Papist. And *Janus Paulus Windisch*, in his Book *De extirpandis Heret. antid.* 10. p. 404. 412. antid. 11. p. 480. and p. 244. positively determines, That the Lutherans and Calvinists are to be persecuted with wars, and not only to be terrified, but likewise delered, cut off, taken out of the way, and utterly extirpated with arms and flames. That all Catholike Princes ought to enter into Holy leagues, associations & confederacies, to destroy and root them out, as they did in France, Anno 1587. That the opportunity is not to be neglected, namely, quando protestantes pecunias exhausti sunt; when the Protestants Purse and money are exhausted (as they are now amongst us

us by excessive endles Taxes, Excises, Civil wars, and a perpetual army too much swayed by Jesuitical counsels, to eat us out, and ruine us with our Religion in conclusion, ere disbanded.) And that the Catholikes may more easily oppresse and destroy these Sectaries, they are to be severed one from another, and divided against each other, by sundry various arts and means, and all occasions laid hold on for this purpose. (And are we not so now in all our Realmes and Dominions more then ever, by the Jesuites and Romish Emisaries?) Which the Emperor Charles the 5 observed (in his proceedings against the Protestants in Germany) to his great advantage.

(i) *Richardi Dinabbi His-  
toria de Zella Civili Galliæ, 16. p. 151. &c.* In pursuance of these Jesuitical (i) Positions, Anno 1576. and 1577. the King of Spain, Duke of Guise, with sundry others, Jesuited Spanish Princes, Nobles and Papists of all degrees, by the Jesuites instigation, and Popes speciall approbation, entered into a bloody Conspiracy, or holy League, as they term it: To restore and retain the most France. p. 778. holy worship of God, according to the form and manner of the holy 779 *Holymian Catholike Apostolike Church of Rome*: to abjure all errors or corruptions contrary thereto, &c. To spend not onely all their Estates, but lives, to repeal all publique Edicts in favor of the Protestants and their associates; to extirpate All Heresies, heresiers, and pursue all such as publike enemies, with fire and sword to death, who should any way oppose or withstand this League, or refuse to joyne with them in it; or fall off from it upon any pretence after this Oath to obserue it. Which League

(k) *Dinabbi, Peter Mathew, Thuanus Ge-  
neral His-  
tory of France, Me-  
gan, Changelium* (So they termed the Protestant Reli-  
gion) *Radictus ex oboz toto extirpetur; Should be clean-  
exirpated out of the whole world. The Massacres, Slaughters  
of how many thousand Protestants by open intestine wars  
and bloody Conspiracies, this League occasioned in France,  
Germany and the Netherlands, together with the murders*

(l) *Speculum Jesuiticum, p. 92.*  
(m) *Meteranus of two French Roman Catholike Kings, the French and  
Hibria. 1. 23. Belgick Histories of those times, will insufficienly inform the  
Reader.* (m) In the year 1602. the Jesuites erected a new  
Col-

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

Colledge and Society at Thonon in Savoy, to convert or utterly extirpate the Protestants, under the Notion of Hereticks. 1. by Preachings. 2. by pious frauds. 3. by *Vi armata*: by force of arms: to which new Society, many Popish Kings, Nobles and others, gave their names; and in June that yeare listed above 35000 expert Soldiers, all Roman Catholickes, to putt this their Designe against the Protestants in execution upon the next opportunity: there being above 50 Jesuites dismissed in Laymens habitts employed in England, to stir up the Papists and people there to joyn with them in this new Association, to root out the Protestants in all places by the Sword, the Principal Engine used by these Ignatians to effect it. To pafs by (n) all the conspiracies and attempts of the Jesuites in Queen Elizabeths reigne, to extirpate our Religion and the Professors of it by open wars, Rebellions, Spanish and forraign invasions both in England, Ireland and Scotland, recorded by Mr. Cambden, Spend and others in her life, and William Wotton in his *Quodlibets*; with their attempts of like Nature in the beginning of King James his raigne, recited in the Statutes of 3. Jacobi, c. 2. where all may peruse them: I shall onely acquaint you, That a little before the beginning of our late bloody wars, Divisions, (contrived, sommised by the Jesuites and Papists, as I (o) have elsewhere at large, discovered, and (p) many Parliament-Declarations attest) one Francis Smith an English Jesuite, openly affirmed to Mr. Wadsworth and Mr. Taxly, That it was publique light, not now a time to bring their Religion by disputing or Books of Romes Masterpiece, Canterbury Doome. And it is very considerable, That when the Jesuites Spanish and Romish Agents had engaged the King and English Protestants against their Protestant Brethren of Scotland, 1639. to cut one anothers throats; the King of Spain had provided a great new Spanish Armado by the Jesuites sollicitation, and a great Land-Army of old Spanish Soldiers to invade the Western and Southern parts of England, then destitute of all forces, Arms & Ammunition to defend it, all drawn to the Northern parts against the Scots; and to joyn with the Popish confederates here, to extirpate the English hereticks and

(n) See Hof-  
mann. *Historia  
Jesuistica* 1.3.  
1. 160.161.162.

(o) Hidden  
workers of dark-  
ness brought to  
light. 652. 662. 668.  
813. 10. 832.  
902. 10. 920.

(p) Exalt

Collect. p. 651,

and Protestants; which designe of theirs, through the *Hot-Landers* unexpected encounter, which scattered their fleet upon the *English Coasts*, and the *Pacification* with the *Scots*, before any engagement of both Armies, was happily prevented. That this Spanish Fleet was then especially designed for *England*, appears (besides other Evidences, which I have (q) elsewhere touched) by the confession of an *English Pilot* in that Navy upon his death-bed, mortally wounded in the first fight, to an *English Minister* and others, so whom he revealed it out of conscience; by some Letters I have met with; and by a Pamphlet made and printed by the *Jesuites*, Anno 1640, intituled (r) *The Jubilee of the Jesuites*, taken from a *Pamphlet* at *Redriff*, and presented by *Sheriffe Warner* to the whole *Commons House*, November 14. 1640. Wherein among other Passages then read in the *House*, (entered in the *Journal* of that day, out of which I transcribed them;) there was a *Particular prayer*, for the holy martyrs that suffered in the fleet sent against the *Hereticks* of *England*, 1639. with this advice; That the *Papists* must fly in *troublous waters*, (to wit, whiles that *The King* was *Engaged* in the *wars* against the *Scots*;) with \* certain *prayers* added, for their good success in that *Designs* against the *Scots*. For the more effectuall carrying on whereof, the *Popes Nuncio*, with the (s) *Colladge* of *Jesuites* then in *Queen-street*, secretly summoned a kind of *Parliament* of *Roman Catholicks* and *Jesuites* in *London*, out of every *County* of *England* and *Wales*, in which *Conne* the *Popes Nuncio* late *President*, by the *Queens commission* and *direction*, in April, 1639. Who granted and collected an extraordinary large *Contribution*, by way of *Subsidy*, from the *Papists*, to carry on this war against our *Protestant Brethren* of *Scotland*, and raise forces to joyn with the *Spaniards*, whom they then expected, to cut the *English Protestants* throats.

(q) *The Royal Papists* secur-  
rite. p. 58, 59.  
*Hidden worke*  
s of *darknes*  
brought to light  
p. 198.

(r) *The Royall*  
*Papists* secur-  
rite. p. 58, 59.  
*Hidden worke*  
s of *darknes*  
p. 198.

#### Nota

\* *Exact Collect.*  
p. 12, 13.

(s) *Hidden*  
*workes* of *dark-*  
*nes* brought to  
*publicke light*.  
p. 189. to 199.  
and *Romes*  
*Master-Piece*.

(t) See the  
*Kings declara-*  
*tion* concerning  
that *Treaty*,  
*Hidden worke*  
s of *darknes*.

\* *Speculum sive*  
*Jubileum je-*  
*suiticum*.

(s) Colladge  
of *Jesuites* then in *Queen-street*, secretly summoned a kind of *Parliament* of *Roman Catholicks* and *Jesuites* in *London*, out of every *County* of *England* and *Wales*, in which *Conne* the *Popes Nuncio* late *President*, by the *Queens commission* and *direction*, in April, 1639. Who granted and collected an extraordinary large *Contribution*, by way of *Subsidy*, from the *Papists*, to carry on this war against our *Protestant Brethren* of *Scotland*, and raise forces to joyn with the *Spaniards*, whom they then expected, to cut the *English Protestants* throats. The *Jesuitical* and *Prelatical* *Papish party* much displeased with the defeat of this their *Plot*, by the unexpected *Pacification* with the *Scots*, 1639. induced the *King* soon after to break and revoke it, (t) Anno 1640. (the very year of the \* *Jesuites Jubilee*, which they solemnized in all places, being

being the 100. year from the first Erection of their Order by Ignatius, Anno 1540.) they caused a new Army to be raised and sent into the North against the Protestants of Scotland, to subdue & destroy them. At the same time they (a) *Hidden* secretly (b) listed an Army of no less then 7000. Romish Carbolicos, kept in private pay, of purpose To cut the Protestants *works of darkness* p. throats who should resist them, and to Conquer the Pro- 225. 226. testants in England first, and then in Ireland; which *Canterburies* Designe they were to put in execution, when the Pope or his *Tom. p. 459.* Legat, with the Spanish, French and Venetian Ambassadors should appoint; who designed them to begin so execuse it, when the King went into Scotland against the Scots; as O Connor (the Queen-Mothers Priest) confessed to Anne Hussey, who justified it to the Lords of the Council then, and afterwards, before the Lords in Parliament upon her Oath. The Jesuites were so confident of the good success of their designes amongst us, and compleat Victory over all the Protestants throughout the world this yeare of their Jubile (making "Triumph over their Enemies, one of their Notes of the true Church") that (x) they appointed a solemn Enterlude to be acted by their Society in the publicque Hall at Aquisgran in Germany, in honour of their Jubilee: wherein they signified to the people, by primed Tickets and Pageants, that the Popish Church of Rome should be brought in upon the Stage, happily fighting against, triumphing, and reigning over all her enemies every where throughout the world, in all ages till that present day, and especially of later times, by their meanes. The beginning of this Enterlude being happily acted, and succeeding according to their mindes; at last there were two Armies of soldiers brought by them upon the Stage, ready to encounter each other: the one of Jesuites and Papists, fighting for the Church of Rome; the other, representing the Protestants warring against her. Before their fight, a Jesuitical alter, clad in blacke, personating a Popish Massie-Priest, divineth good success to the Popish Army, praying for it with an affected devotion and solemnie invocation (or rather profanation) of Gods name: after which, the Popish Army of actors, as being certain of the instant victory, uttered

<sup>\*</sup> See Bellar.  
min. de Notis  
Ecc. Not. 19.  
(x) *Speculum*  
pro Jubileum  
Jesuiticum. p.  
320. to 324.

uttered these words to their Captain (as their parts directed them) with a loud reiterated voyce and shone; *Perireat, Quisquis est hostis Ecclesiae: Let him perish, let him perish, whoever is an enemy of the Church: whereupon a great part of the Stage on which they acted, together with the whole Popish Army (not one Soldier or Captain excepted) at the repeating of these words, and wished, fell to the ground immediately, with so great celerity, that many of them fell they were fallen down, before they discerned themselves to fall; their Seized enemies of the Church (representing the Protestant) standing all fast, at least in place, if not in mind, on the other part of the Stage, which fell not at all. With this sudden fall, many of the Popish Army were bruised in peccat with the beams of the Stage falling upon them; who through pain and horror, needed Monitors to silence their oruries; others having their bones broken and Limbes put out of joyn, were carried to the Chirurgions to be dressed; and all the rest confounded with shame, crept away secretly under the Veile to their Lodging. And so this Jesuitical Enterlude, by divine Justice, ended in a real unexpelld bloody Tragedy and real rout of the whole pretended invicible Popish Army of Jesuites; and the Scotch War, that yeeld (which they so much depended on) through Gods mercy, concluded in a blessed Peace and Union between both Nations.*

(7) See *Hidden works of dark-bells*, by the *Jesuites Plots and instigations*, seconded with *secret encouragementes*, and *promises of assistance with Arms and Moneys from Cardinal Richelieu, the King of Spain, Pope, and other forraign Popish Princes*, undertook

*The Rife and Progress of the late horrid bloody Massacre of all the Protestants in Ireland R. bellion, Land, and surprisal of all the Forts, Castles, Arms and Ammunition therin*, on the 23 of October, 1641. (2) be

ing Ignatius day, the Founder and New Canonized Saint of the *Jesuited Society*, for the greater Honour of their Patron, Order; they being the chief *Plotters of this horrid bloody Treason*. Which horrid Conspiracie, though happily discovered the night before its execution, at Dublin, and some few places else; yet it took effect in most other parts of Ireland, to the slaughter of neer two hundred thousand

Prote-

and all Zealous Protestant Friends of England.

Protestants there, in few months space; seconded with a bloody Warre, for sundry years; to the losse of many thousands more lives. ¶ To this Plot <sup>\*</sup> all the Papists in England were privy, who intended the late Massacre in England <sup>†</sup> and soon after by of d'Artus, &c.

the Pope and <sup>\*</sup> Jesuits instigations, by the assistance of foreign <sup>‡</sup> Princes, they engaged the King and Parliament in a long, lasting bloody answere, unchristian war against each other, concluding in the Kings and Parliaments joint raignes by an Army raised for their mutual defense, induced thereunto through the Jesuits instigations and policies. After which, they engaged the Princes of England and Scotland (formerly united by the scidish Bands and Covenants against them) to war upon, invade and destroy each other by land; and

soon after that (by the Spanish <sup>\*</sup> Agents Assistance) raised a most dangerous bloody Warre between our Protestant old Allies of the Netherlands and the English by Sea; to the infinite damage, prejudice of both, and the glutious of whole Queens <sup>§</sup> of the Gallant Christian Protestant Mind, that <sup>¶</sup> 4.25, 27.

ver yet was fled, the expanse of more treasure and men in these intestine Wars, than would have conquered all Spain, Italy, and the Indies, had they been employed upon such a designe; and to the entailing of a <sup>\*</sup> perpetuall Army, in us and our posterities, more ready as we have of late years found by sad experiments, to hearken to the Jesuits clandestine suggestions, seditions, and execute their secret plotted Designes to ruine our Kingdomes, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties, Monarchy, Church, Religion, then to follow the Advice, Votes, Counsels, Directions, Commands of our Parliaments, Kinges, and the best affected Protestants of all ranks <sup>||</sup> who first raised, and have so long maintained them, for quite other ends (borester touched) then what they (of late times) have most pursued, to the Popes and Jesuits great content.

5. That the Jesuits have endeavoured, attempted the convolution, concusion, subversion <sup>\*\*</sup> and ruine of the Empire, Realms, and ancient settled Governments and States of Germany, Russia, Bohemia, Hungary, Fomer, Poland, but likewise of England, Scotland and Ireland, and to new model them

<sup>\*</sup> Exall Coll.  
p.662, 666,  
813 to 832.  
A Collection of  
Ordinances, p.  
167, 318, 354,  
424, and the  
History of In-  
dependency.

<sup>\*</sup> See the Cam-  
panella de Mo-  
narchie Hisp.

<sup>\*</sup> See the 39  
Annals of the  
Instrument of  
Government.

To the truly Christian Reader,

into \* other Forms of Government. What mould of Government they intended to cast England into, is thus long since described by *William Watson* (a secular Priest).  
¶ *Krafft Coll.* p.3.4.461,462  
491 497, 498,  
917,631.

+ England is the main chance of Christendome at this present, by seditions, factions, tampering and aspiring Heads: the only *Bat*, *Mark*, *White*, the *Jesuits* aim at, as well in intention as execution of their pretended expedition, exploit and action. I am of opinion, that no man on earth can tell what Government it is they intend to establish, ratifie and confirm, when they come to their preconceived Monarchy; no not any of their Plot-casters. No question it is, but their Government shall be as uncertain as their New conceited Monarchy; their Monarchy as mutable as their Reign, and their Reign as variable as the *Winde*, or *Proteus* in his Complements. But no question is to be made of it; but that the Government they do directly intend at this present is, A MOST ABSOLUTE SOVERAIGNTY, DOMINION AND STATE, CLEARLY EXEMPTED from any subordination, TO ANY LAW or Legifer divine or humane; and therefore it is rightly called DESPOTICON in the highest degree of exemplary immunitie, \* IMPERIALITY AND ABSOLUTE REIGN, RULE AND AUTHORITY, as containing in it three sorts of Government; *Sci*. Monarchical, Aristocraticall, Democraticall, in matters of Counsell and managing of Common wealths causes; not in point OF REGALITY, HONOUR AND INHERITANCE; For there shall be neither Title, nor Name, nor Honour given, taken or done to any Prince, Duke, Marquesse, Earl, Viscount, Lord, Baron, or the like, (all the Jesuitical Governors being Puritan like, Seniors, Elders, Provincials, &c.) neither shall there be any successions by Birth or

\* See the New blood, TO ANY HONOUR, OFFICE OR MAGISTRACY from the Monarch, Pater General, to the Commonwealth of England, Pater Minister, but ALL SHALL GO BY ELECTION OR CHOICE. Whether our late and present variable floating New moulded Governments have not been cast by this long since predicted Jesuiticall Mould

Mould, let wise men, with all our late, yea present Go-  
vernours, now sadly consider and determine.

6. That the\* Jesuits in a publicke Disputation held <sup>Albonis de</sup> at Madrid, published by them under this Titlez *Con- Vargas Rela-  
elusiones Politica sub Regis Domini nostri presidio*, instruct-<sup>tio cap. 1.</sup> <sup>Speculum Ge-  
i</sup> ed the King of Spain (their Chief Protector, \* whom <sup>18, 219.</sup>  
they most extoll above all other Kings, to promote both his universal Monarchy and their own thereby.) That <sup>18, 219.</sup>  
in relation to his Empire, Power was necessary, which <sup>18, 219.</sup>  
power they defined to be: A faculty, not onely of re-  
taining the Kingdomes he already possessed, but like-  
wise of acquiring other mens. Perswading him by this  
Doctrine to believe: That he was therefore consecra-  
ted a Catholike King by God, that he might enjoy a  
faculty, not onely of keeping his own, but also OF IN-  
VADING AND SEISING UPON OTHER MENS  
DOMINIONS. For to retain ones own, was the praise  
onely of a private family: DE ALIENIS CERTARE  
REGIA LAUS EST: but it was a Royall praise to  
fight for that which is other mens: NEC REGNAN-  
DI CAUSA JUS VIOLARE CRIMEN EST, DUM  
CÆTERIS REBUS PIETAS COLATUR: Neither  
is it a Crime to violate Law or Right, to reign or gain  
a Crown, whiles that Piety in other things shall be ob-  
served. Which Jesuitical Machivillian *unrighteous Do-  
ctrine*, though (as *Albonis Vargas*, a Spanish Popish  
Priest resolves) it be diametrically contrary to the do- <sup>See Job. 10. 1.</sup>  
ctrine of our Lord Jesus himself, instructing men, that <sup>Ezech. 18. 5. 10.</sup>  
\* aliena obtinere non Potentis Principis, SED IMPOTEN- <sup>14. Levit. 6. 1.</sup>  
TIS AC VIOLENTO PRÆDONIS EST: Yet the Je- <sup>4. Job 20. 19.</sup>  
suites and their instruments of late years have sufficiently <sup>20 c. 24. 2. 10. 15.</sup>  
propagated it amongst our English Grandees and Army. <sup>Obad. 5. Jer.</sup>  
Saints; for a most sacred Oracle, as their violent invasions <sup>Albonis de</sup>  
of other mens Realms, Powers, Offices, Pallaces, Lands, &c. c. 5. 7. see  
Estates, and Possessions of all kindes, by meer armed power c. 2. 3. 16. 18. 19  
and might, demonstrate beyond contradiction. <sup>56, 57. & Ho-</sup>  
<sup>Spanish Historia</sup>  
7. That the\* Jesuites in their Book, *De Zelo S. Ignati in Religione sua instituenda*, printed at Madrid, p. 132. 207. <sup>Jesuitical, 206</sup>  
do.

do glory; *Hoc Societatis proprium est, ut quotidie novas promat inventiones quibus homines ad Deum perducentur.* That this is the property of their Society, that it DAILY BRINGS FORTH NEW INVENTIONS, whereby men may be brought home to God (that is, to their Religion and Society) the principle whereof they, and *Vargas* record, to be these. Their *persuading* of men to embrace the *Gospel*, by AN ARMY; the use of ARMES, Power, Terror, Fire: Their *Exercise* of Merchandise (which many of them in most places & in \* England too, now use, they being very great Merchants, Factors, and Returners of Moneys by Bills of Exchange) and of all other Secular Imployments, Callings, in Laymens hab'its, the more easily to insinuate themselves into all Countries, Places, Companies and Societie's of men to infect, seduce, and discover their sects, according to this their received Maxime; *JESUITA EST OMNIS HOMO*: a Jesuit is every man: that is, a man of all Professions, Callings, Sects, Religions to effect his ends: Their questioning, traducing, oppugning, censuring of all the Articles of the Apostles Creed, and received Principles, Doctrines of Christian Religion; corrupting, slighting, falsifying the Scriptures themselves, together with Councils, Fathers, Schoolmen, and all other Divines; but those only of their own Order, which they incomparably extoll above and prefer before all other: Their venting of new Opinions, Notion, Revelations, Expositions, Crochets, Heresies, Problems, both in Divinity it self, and all other Arts and Sciences in the Press, Pulpit, Universities, Schools. And if these (as *Vargas* affirms us) be their properties and new inventions to propagate the *Gospel*, and draw men unto God (which our Lord Jesus himself and his true Disciples were wholly ignorant of) may we not certainly conclude, that they have of late years been extraordinary busy at this their *base* work, amongst us, and more especially in spreading their *Gospel* by AN ARMY, and taking upon them the use of ARMES, in imitation

\* Hidden  
works of dark-  
ness brought to  
publicne light,  
p. 203, 204.

and all zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

of their Military Father Ignatius, with all other secular Employments, and New Sects to draw Proselyts and new separate Congregations to them, throughout our Realms, to destroy both our Church Discipline and Religion, as well as our Civill Government and Laws?

8. That as the whole House of Commons in their <sup>Exalt Collo</sup> ~~monstrance~~ of 15. December 1641. charge the Jesuites, <sup>p. 334 &c.</sup> and late Jesuited Court-Counsellors, with a *Malignant* and *pernicious* ~~designe~~ of <sup>the High</sup> ~~subverting~~ <sup>Court of Justice</sup> THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWS and <sup>had not its</sup> *Principall* of Government upon which the Religion and Justice of the Kingdome are firmly established. So *William Watson* a Secular Priest, chargeth Father Parsons, the English Jesuite, and his Jesuited companions, in their *Memorial for Reformation of England*, when it should be reduced under the power of the Jesuites (as Parsons was confident it would be, though he should not live to see it) written at Sevil in Spain, Anno Dom. 1590. that they intended to have *Magna Charta*, with our Common Fundamental Laws and Liberties, abrogated and suppressed: thus expressed by *William Watson* in his *Quodlibet*, pag. 92, 94, 95: *Further Parsons and the Jesuites in their deep Jesuitical Court of Parliament, began at Styx in Phlegasan, have compiled their Act in a compleat Volume, intituled: THE \* HIGH COURT OF REFORMA-* <sup>Quare, sub-</sup> *TION FOR ENGLAND.* <sup>ther the High</sup> *And to give you a taste of* <sup>Court of Justice</sup> *the intent by that base Court of A TRIBE OF TRAI-* <sup>had not its</sup> *TORS lawcilly (like to Gade, Jack Straw, and Tom Tiler)* <sup>title from hence</sup> *USURPING the AUTHORITY of both STATES, EC-* <sup>Now written</sup> *CLESIASTICAL and TEMPORALL in all their RE-* <sup>Dialogue be-</sup> *BELLIOUS ENTERPRISES: these were principall* <sup>between a secular</sup> *points discussed, set down, and so decreed by them, &c.* <sup>Priest and Cap-</sup> *He first mentions three of them relating to Church-* <sup>Gentlemen.</sup> *men, Scholars, and Church and Colledge-Lands; which* <sup>printed at</sup> *were to be put in Fecoffes hands, and they all to be re-* <sup>Witnes, 1661.</sup> *duced unto Arbitrary Pensions, &c. And then proceedes* <sup>p. 93.</sup> *how to the fourth. The fourth Statute was there made* <sup>concerning the COMMON LAWS of this LAND; and</sup> *that consisted of this one principal point, That, ALL*

THE GREAT CHARTERS of ENGLAND MUST  
BE BURNT; the manner of holding Lands in Fee  
simple, Fee tail; Kings service, Socage or Villanage,  
brought into villany, scoggery and popularity; and in  
few, the Common Law must be wholly annihilated, abolished,  
and troden down under foot, and Cæsars civill Imperials  
brought amongst us, and sway for a time in their pla-  
ces. All whatsoever England yelds, being but base, bar-  
barous, and void of all fence, knowledge, or discretion  
shewed in the first Founders, and Legislators; and on the  
other side, all whatsoever is or shall be brought in by these out-  
casts of Moses, stain of Solon, and refuse of Lycurgus, must  
be reputed for metaphysical, sense-divine, and of more excel-  
lency than the other were. Which he thus seconds, *Quod-*  
*libet 9. Article 2. p. 286.* First, it is plain, that Father Par-  
sons and his Company (divide it amongst them how  
they list) have laid a plot, as being most consonant and  
fitting for their other Designments, That the Common  
Law of the Realm of England must be (forsooth) either  
abolished utterly: or else, bear no greater sway in the Realm  
than the Civil Law doth. And the chief reason is, for that

\* And is not  
this the chief  
Reason of their  
late endeavoured  
alterations  
the State of the Crown and Kingdome by the Common Laws is  
so strongly settled, as whilst they continue, the Jesuites see  
not how they can work their wills. And on the other side,  
in the Civil laws, they think they have some shreds,  
whereby they may patch a cloak together to cover a  
bloody shew of their Treasons for the present, from the  
eyes of the Vulgar people. Secondly, the said good Fa-  
ther hath set down a course how every man may shake off  
all authority at their pleasures, as if he would become a new

\* And was not  
this the very  
principal engine  
lately used to  
alter our old  
Fundamental  
Government, cast off the King, and divest his Parliament of their three Kingdoms, winne  
the Armies printed Declarations, and the Junctee Votes in pursuance of them, Jan. 3.  
1648. See *More Telle Peier by John Roger*.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

gative, as that it may be lawfull for them, when they think  
meet, to place and displace Kings and Princes, as men do their  
Tenants at will, birelings or ordinary Servants. Which  
Anabaptistical and abominable Doctrine, proceeding from a  
turbulent tribe of Traiterous Puritans, and other Her-  
etics, this treacherous Jesuite would now joist in o' the  
Catholik Church, as a ground of his corrupt Divinity.  
And p. 330, 332. He intends to alter and change all Laws,  
Customs, and Orders of this Noble Isle. He hath prejudi-  
ced the law of Property, in instituting Government,  
Governours, and Hereditary Princes to be, BENEPLA-  
CITUM POPULI, and all other private possessions, ad bene-pla-  
citum sui, &c. Whether any such new deep Jesuitical Court  
of Parliaments, and high Courts of Reformation for England, to  
carry on this old Design of the Jesuites against our Laws,  
hath been of late years sitting amongst us in or neer West-  
minster, or elsewhere, in secret Counsels every week, as di-  
vers intelligent Protestants have informed me, and Hugh  
Peters reported to divers on his own knowledge ( being  
well acquainted with their Persons and practises of late  
years) It concerns others nearer to them, and more able  
then I to examine. Sure I am, a greater man by far then  
Hugh Peters, in an Assembly of Divines and others, for re-  
conciling all dissenting parties, not long since averred  
to them on his own knowledge: 'That during our late  
Innovations, distractions, subversions in Church, State,  
and overturning of Laws and Government, the common  
adversary hath taken many advantages, to effect his de-  
signes thereby in civil and spiritual respects. That he knew  
very well, that Emissaries of the Jesuites never came over in p. 16, 17.  
those swarms, as they have done, since these things were on foot. \* The more  
That DIVERS GENTLEMEN CAN BEAR WITNES  
WITH HIM, that they had a CONSISTORY AND  
COUNCIL ABROAD, THAT RULES ALL THE  
AFFAIRS OF THE THINGS IN ENGLAND. That  
they had fixed in England, in the limits of most Cities  
deals ( of which he was able to produce the PARTI-  
CULAR INSTRUMENT) an Episcopall power, with

\* A great sick-  
ler against our  
Laws and a  
promoter of this  
Jesuitical de-  
signe.

\* This be batb  
since this Epistle  
penned, affir-  
ed in a printed  
Speech in the  
Painted Cham-  
ber before a  
greater Assem-  
bly, Sep. 4, 1634.

\* The more  
shame for those  
who suffer it?

\* Therefore of  
the many and  
other Rulers  
by this clear  
publike confes-  
sion in print.

Archdeacons and other persons, to pervert, seduce, and deceive the people: And all this, whiles we were in this sad and deplorable distressed condition. Yea, most certain it is, that many hundreds (if not some thousands) of them, within these few years, have been sent over from Forraign Seminaries into England under the disguises of \* converted Jews, Physicians, Chymurgions, Mechanics of all sorts, Merchants, Factors, Travellers, Soldiers, and some of them particularly into the Army; as appears by the late printed Examination of Ramsey the Anabaptized, New-dipped Jesuite, under the mask of The 1 of them would have for a Jewish Convert, taken at New Castle in June 1633. tably ravished a maid in March last, fled away in the night to a-void apprehe-<sup>3</sup> ntion, from Dur-<sup>3</sup> old popish Gunpowder Traitors; who though the son of one of the executed in Gloucester-<sup>3</sup> shire, He confesses, he was a soul-<sup>3</sup> Jesuite papist, if not a professed Jesuit; \* who in the years 1638 and 1639, conspired with the Popes Nuncio and a Conclave of Jesuites sitting in Council at London, to subvert our Religion, introduce a universal tolleration of the popish Religion in our kingomes, new modle and shake our former established govern-<sup>3</sup> ment, and to poison, destroy the late King himself, in case he consented not to them therein: and for this very purpose, both plot-<sup>3</sup> ted, raised, promoted the first Wars between the Protestants of England and Scotland, which he abetted all he could, by his letters and secret Collections of moneys from all the Papists throughout England and elsewhere, who largely contributed to works of dark-<sup>3</sup> this war and designe: for which he, Sir John Winter, Master mifte brought to publike light p. 189. 190. 196. 202. 211. 213. 214. Ex-<sup>3</sup> all Collection p. 12. 13. Canterbury Doome p. 453. Whereupon

is first audience, he had the best reception, and fairest Promises of Aid in general that could be wished; writing hopefully of supplies of Money from Rome to the Queen and others, as both Houses of Parliament in their (c) Declaration and Letters, (published 26 March 1646.) proclaim to all the world) and likewise good Hopes of (d) a Cardinals Cap for himself, or the Lord Auben, or Mr. Mounaigne, for which he and the Queen solicited. After that, upon his return from Rome, he was sent over into England about Decemb. 1648. as (e) a fit instrument to New-moddles into a Commonwealth, and promote the violent Proceedings of the Army Officers and their Confederates (set on work by the Jesuits and their Agents,) against the late King, Parliament, Members: where, upon his arrival, he was, instead of being apprehended and brought to justice for the premises, hugged by some Grandees whom he courted, permitted to ride and walk about at large, while the Members were under strict guards and restraints; frequently repaired to Whitehall, where he was well received; his Sequestration totally taken off, without any Fees or gratification, by Special order; and himself now at last permitted to lodge not only in Widdemans House, (where the Queens Capuchins formerly resided) but sometimes in Whitehall it self; to the admiration of many understanding Protestants, who justly suspect, he hath there more disguised Jesuits to consult with, and promote both their old and new designs against our Church, State, Religion, Laws, Liberties, till they have brought them and us to utter ruine. I shall for brevity sake acquaint you with one memorable general instance, discovering what swarms of Jesuits are now amongst us, under other visors. An English Protestant Nobleman (a person of honor) whose Ancestors were Papists, being courteously entertained within these two years at Rome by some eminent Jesuits, in their chief Colledge there, was brought by them into a Gallery having Chambers round about it, with Titles over every door for several Kingdoms, and amongst the rest, one for ENGLAND. Upon which, he enquiring of the Jesuits, what these titles signified, was answered by them, That they were the Chambers of the Provincial Jesuits, of each Kingdom and Province (written over the respective doors) wherein they had any members of their society

(c) A Collection of Ordinances, &c. p. 831, 832, 833 851, 852, 853, 869.

(a) Hidden Works of Darkness, &c. p. 252, 253, 254.

(d) See the Letter in the Appendix to my Speech in Parliament, & Relation of the Armies Proceedings against the Members: The II. Part of the History of Independence.

society now residing, who received all Letters of intelligence from their Agents in those places, every week, and gave account of the to the General of their Order. That the Provincial for England, lodged in the Chamber over which the title ENGLAND was written, who could shew him the last news from England; which he desiring to see, they thereupon knocked at the door, which was presently opened: the Provincial being informed who it was, the Lord was, read the last news from England to them. Hereupon the Nobleman demanded of them, Whether any of their society were now in England? & how they could stay with safety, or support themselves there, seeing most of the English Nobility, Gentry, and Families that were Papists, were ruined in their estates, or sequestred by the late Wars & troubles, so as they could neither harbour, conceal nor maintain them, as they had done heretofore? They answered, It was true; but the greater the dangers and difficulties of those of their society now in England were, the greater was their merit. And, that they had then above fifteen hundred of their Society in England, able to work in several Possessions & Trades, which they had there taken upon them, the better to support & secure themselves from being discovered; (who, together with some Popish Priests and Friars no doubt, upon diligent inquiry will appear to be the chiefest Speakers, Quakers, Dispensers, Seducers, Rulers in most separate Congregations, and the principle brothers of all New Opinions, Blasphemies, now abounding amongst us.) This Relation I have heard from the mouth of a Reverend Divine more than once; to whom this Noble Lord, upo his return into England not many Months since, seriously related the Premises, averring the truth of them upon his Honour. Yet for all this, since the stupendous pretended repeals and annihilations of the Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance, & that of Abjuration of Popery (consented to by the late King in the Isle of Wight): purposely made for the better detection and prevention of Jesuites, and their treasonable forementioned practices against our Church, Kingdoms, Princes, Religion, Parliaments, and Government, by the wisdom and zeal of our best affected vigilant <sup>\*</sup> Protestant Parliaments; I can neither hear nor read of any effectual means, endeavoured or preferred by any in power, for the discovery of these Romish latencies,

<sup>\*</sup> 1 Eliz. c. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Eliz. c. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Jac. c. 1, 2, 3;

<sup>5</sup> 7 Jac. c. 6.

nizaries, or banishing, setting, and keeping them out of England, where they have wrought so much mischief of late years, and whose utter ruine they attempt: nor any encouragement at all given to the Discoverers of their Plots and Perilous; but many affronts and discouragements put upon them, and particularly on my self, lately mewed up close Prisoner, under strictest Guards in remotest Castles, near three years space ( without <sup>\*</sup> any Accasacion, bearing or particular cause yet assigned or disclosed to me, though oft then and since demanded by me from my Imprisoners) whiles they all walked abroad at large, of purpose to hinder me from any discoveries of their practises by my Pen, where as they printed, vended publickly here in England above 30000 Popish Books of several kinids during my imprisonment, without the least restraint, to oppugne our Protestant established Religion ( as many of them do in terminis as most damnable Heresie ) propagate the Jesuites Plots, and antichristian Romish Church and Religion amongst us, as you may read at large in the *Stationers Beaten* fired; which seasonable book, and Discovery of these Romish Emissaries books and plots, some <sup>\*</sup> Officers of the Army, in their *Beaten* quenched, publickly traduced in print, as a *New-Powder-Treason* of the Presbyterian Party, to blow up the Army, and that pretended Parliament ( of their own erection ) which themselves soon after blew up and dissolved in good earnest, pleading for a free Toleration of such Popish Books, and all Religions, as agreeable to the Armies Engagements and Principles, to carry on their designs against our Religion and Law. But most certain it is; there hath been of late years not only a *General Council* of Officers of the Army firing many moneths together in Council, to <sup>\*</sup> alter and new model all our ancient Laws and Statutes, in pursuance of Father Parson's design; but likewise two *Conventicles* of their own election and election, sitting of late in the Parliament House at Westminister, assuming to themselves the Name, and far more than the Power, of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England; together with the transcendent ambitious Title of *The Supream Authority of the Nation*, ( in derogation of the Army Officers Supremacy, who sufficiently chastised them for this strange *Usurpation* )

<sup>\*</sup> My Imprisoners have lately professed to me, that they knew not the cause why I was thus close imprisoned.

<sup>\*</sup> See *Causa*, the *Jesuites* *Holy Court* printed in Folio..

<sup>\*</sup> T. P. the new Faux is first.

<sup>\*</sup> See their Declarations, Proposals, and printed Papers, 1647, 1648, 1649, & since for that purpose.

\* Qui tam facile receptas & patrias leges cum novis aliis commutant, certe legum ipsarum auctoritatem debilitant atque enervant. Nec enim tantum legis abrogatio proderit, quantum Magistratus non obediendi mos obvertit. Aristotle Polit. I. 2. c. 6.

(f) And since this in a Printed Speech, Sept. 4 1654.

\* Hath not the Army done this in our three Nations? See their own Chaplain Sedgewick, his Justice on the Armies Remonstrance 1648.

(t) The Monarchy of England hath been, 1. In the Britons, 2. in the Saxons, 3. in the Danes, 4. in the Normans Royal Line's, & now the 5. must be

who have made it their chief businesse, not only to New-model our ancient Fundamental Government, Parliaments, Ministry, Ministers maintenance, by Glebes, Tithes, and our Universities, much according to Parsons and his Fellow Jesuites forementioned Plat-formes, and Thomas Campanella his Instructions to the King of Spain, *De Monarchia Hisp.* c. 25. but likewise to New-mould, subvert, eradicate the whole Body of our \* municipal Laws, and wish them the great Charter of our Liberties is self. And in their last cashiered, unelected Convention, (as some of their *Co-parties*, now in greatest Power assure us, in their (f) *True State of the Case of the Commonwealth of England*, &c. London, 1654. p. 15, 16, 17, 18.) there was a strong prevailing party whom nothing would satisfie, but A Total Eradication of the whole body of the good old Laws of England (the *Guardians of our Lives and Fortunes*) to the utter subversion of civil Rights and Propriety; who likewise took upon them (by virtue of a supposed right of Saintship in themselves) to lay the foundation of a new Plat-form, which was to go under the Name of A Fifth Monarchy, never to have an end, but to war with all other powers and break them to pieces, baptizing all their profestes into this Principle and persuasion; that the Powers formerly in being, were branches of the (t) Fourth Monarchy (of England, Scotland, and Ireland) which must be rooted up and destroyed. And what other Fifth Monarchy this could be, but that projected universal Monarchy of the Jesuites, which would bring the whole Monarchy of Great Britain and Ireland, together with France, Spain, and all other Princes, States in Christendome under the Jesuites subjection, and break all other powers in pieces; (mentioned by Watson, in his *Quodlibet* p. 306, to 333. and *Alfonsus de Vargas, Relatio de Strategematis & Sophismatis Politicis societatis Iesu, Ad Monarchiam orbis terrarum sibi confidendam* c. 8. &c.) or else, that *Elective New Monarchy* of Great Britain and Ireland, projected by (v) Campanella and Cardinal Richelieu, which some Grandees now endeavour by their Instruments to erect and perpetuate for ever (x) without alteration in themselves elective in others. (v) *De Monarchia Hisp.* c. 25. See the Epistle to my *Jus Patronatus*. (x) Art. 1, 2, 12, 25, 32, 33, 41, 42.

and their Successors, ( though they thus expressly brand it in others;) let themselves, and wise men resolve? it being apparent, by the practices and proceedings of all the Propugners of this new Project, that this *Fifth Monarchy* they intend to erect, is neither the *Spiritual Kingdom of Jesus Christ in their own hearts*, mortifying their ambition, covetousness, pride, self-seeking, unrighteousness, violence, rapines, & other worldly lusts; nor the *personal reign of Christ himself alone*, in and over our 3 Kingdoms, and all other Nations for ever, \* depriving all *Temporal Kings and Princes* of their *Crowns, Rights, and Government over their Subjects*; which they falsely endeavour to evince from *Dan. 2.44,45, c.7.14,27. Micah 4. 1, 2,7. Luke 1.32,33. Rev. 20.1. to 8. 1 Cor. 15. 24,25. Heb. 12. 26, 27, 28.* but a mere supream, arbitrary, temporal Authority without Bounds or Limits, encroached in themselves and their confederates, without any colour of Right or Title by the Laws of God or the Realm, and no ways intended, but refuted by all these sacred Scriptures, & others, which explain them. This design of the Jesuites, to alter and subvert the whole body of our Laws, was so far promoted by the Jesuitical and Anabaptistical party in this last Assembly, (elected only by the (y) Army-Officers,) that on Aug. 20. 1653. (as our News-books print,) they Ordered, there should be a Committee selected, to consider of A new Body of the Law, for the Government of this Commonwealth, who Were to new-mould The whole Body of the Law; according to Parsons his mould. And hereupon our cheating Astrologers (especially Lilly & Culpeper, the (z) Jesuites grand Factors to cry down our Laws, Judges, Ministers) from the meer visible earthly Conjunctions, Votes, Motions, Influences of these New wanning excentrick Planets at Westminster only, (not of any Celestial Stars, as they would make Country-Clowns believe, always moving and acting themselves by an unalterable Law from the very Creation until now, Gen. 1. 14. to 19. c. 8. 22. Psal. 104. 19. Plal. 136. 8. 9. Jer. 31. 35, 36. c. 33. 20, 24. Job 38. 32, 33. therefore no ways exciting men to alter Eu-damonal Laws and Governments here on earth) took upon them in their (a) *Monthly Prognostications* for this year 1654. *et accepisser. Claudio l. 1. in March. (y) A True State, &c. p.13. (z) See The; Campanella, de Monarch. Hisp. c. 23, 25, 27. (a) See their Almanacks in January, February, September, October, December, 1654.*

\* Luke 17. 21.  
Rom. 14. 17.  
2 Pet. 1. 11.  
Col. 1. 13.  
Heb. 12. 28.  
Rev. 12. 10.

Nox arbitrit mortalitatem, qui Regna dat car. Iesu. Sedu- lius in hym- no ait: de vita Christi.  
Rex iste quin- cius est non re- natus Reges pug- nando superare, sed moriendo inabiliter sub- jugare. Venit enim non ut regnet virus, sed ut triun- phet occidus; nec ut de ainc gratus auro exercitum qua- rat, sed pro salvando Gen- tibus pretiosum sanguinem fun- dat. Hujus pueri regnum non est de hoc mundo; sed per ipsum regnatur in hoc mundo. Ipsi est unum Sapientia Dei, que dicit in Proverbii, Per Reges reg- nant. Tu enim regnum nullum tenus habuisses, nisi ab isto puer qui nunc natus

(b) See *Sixtus ab Hemminga Astrologie Refutatio* f. 14v. *Fräc tus Officium de diu. Astrorum facultate, in lacuā astrologiam. Com. Seppens contra Astrologos. Alexandre de Angelis in Astrologos. Elegiū Savanarola aduersus Divinatricem Astro-nomiam: & Apologeticus pro tractatu ejus aduersus Astrologos, 1581. Pius VIII: audita la contra Astro. Purchas Pilgrimage, p. 12, 13, 64. Mr. Gatake vindication of his Annotations on Job, 10. 2. London, 1653. *Sixtus Seuulus* Bibl. sanct. p. 36, 331, 424, 10 429. \*Accidere potest, ut publica utilitas simu-latione & specie LEGES & nonnulli & Civitates eur-tauerit. *Anisti. Polit. 1.2. c. 6.* \*In his Victoria of Truth. 1654. (c) *Quælibet. 5. 111. 4. p. 144.**

almost in every Month to predict, the pulling down of the *Laws of the Nation, and of Lawyers to the ground*: the calling of the great Charter it self into question, with other Liberties, as not suiting with English mens brains at this time. The plucking up the *Crabtree of the Law* by the Roots, to binder the future growing of it: there being no reason we should now be governed by the *Norman Law*, since the *Norman Race* is taken away by the same Instrument (the *Sword*) that brought in: and the like. But these Predictors of our Laws and Lawyers downfalls, could neither foresee nor predict the sudden downfall of these Lawless earthly *Westminster Planets* from the Firmament of their new-created Power; who should effect it by their influences. Wherefore, though I look upon these and all other their Astrological predictions, as (b) mere *Figments, Choses, and Im- postures*, in relation to the *Celestial Planets*, (as are their 12 Signs and Houses of the Heavens, whereon all or most of their artless *Art and Predictions* are grounded;) Yet I cannot but take notice of them, as *clear Discoveries of a strange Jesuitical & Anabaptistical Combination* of a predominant party amongst us, to carry on this ancient Plot of the *Jesuits* related by *Wat-son*, against the great Charter of our Liberties, and the whole body of our Laws. And truly, when I seriously consider the late great dangerous, destructive Revolutions, "Changes both of our Government, Parliaments, Laws, and the manifold extra-vagant publick *Innovations, changes, proceedings*, originally contrived by the *Jesuits*, but visibly acted, avowed, by *Ana-baptists, Independents, and some Pseudo-Presbyterians* in the Army, and elsewhere, formerly reputed *Puritans*, and now so styled by \* *Militiere*; it puts me in mind of 3 memorable prophetical *Passages* of *William Watson* in his *Quælibet*, printed 52 years since (A.D. 1602.) which I have frequently thought on of late years, as now experimentally accomplished; I shall befeech our late and present *Grandees*, and *New State Mint-Masters* seriously to consider them; which I shall here relate in his very printed words.

1. *Tc. I make no question of it, if the Jesuits prevail in Eng-land, they intend, and will turn all things topsy-turvy, upside down: King shall up, Sire shall under. In Parsons High Cen-ter of Reformation, All the whole State must be changed: and the Lands and Seignories of Clergy and Nobility, Univer-sities,*

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

rites, Colledges, and what not, must be altered, abridged, and taken away. And is not all this visibly effected already for the most part; and the rest projected, and ne'er accomplished?

2. (d) I verily think, that all the Puritans will joyn whole-<sup>(d) Quodlibet</sup>ly with the Jesuites at length, (how far off soever they seem to be, and are yet in external profession of Religion) there being at least half an hundred Principles, and odd Tricks concerning Government, Authority, Tyranny, Popularity, Conspiracy, &c. which they jump as just together in, as if both were made of one mould. And is not this really verified (though not by the old loyal English Puritans), yet at least by sundry <sup>6. At. 4. p. 169.</sup>  
<sup>see p. 27, 28.</sup>  
<sup>\* Puritan Anabaptists, Independents, some temporizing Presbyterians, and by many Army Officers, Soldiers, (in late or present Power) if they will but compare their last six years actions with the Jesuites? which hath given great advantages to our Romish Adversaries to draw more Proselytes to their Religion. O let them consider it seriously in the fear of God, and lament it with the greatest grief of heart! \*</sup>

3. (e) The Jesuites without all question, are more dangerous <sup>(e) Quodlibet</sup> pernicious and noysome, to the Commonwealth of England and <sup>2. At. 1. p. 26,</sup> Scotland, than the Puritans; as having more singular fine wits <sup>27.</sup>

amongst them, and many learned men on their side; whereas the Puritans have none but Grossum Caput: they, many Gentiles, Nobles, & some Princes to side with them: the Puritans but few of the first; rare, to have any of the second; and none at all (unless it be one) of the last on their side. And so by consequent, If matters come to hearing, hammering and handling betwixt the Jesuites and Puritans; The latter are sure to be rid-  
<sup>Note.</sup> den like Fools, and come to wrack. And whether they have not been ridden, outwitted, wracked by the Jesuites plots, wits, wiles, instruments both in their late Councils, Innovations of Government, forcible dissolutions, subversions of Parliaments, Laws, Liberties, Anomalous Proceedings, Deligns, let our late dis-bouted, dismounted Puritan-Grandees and Stats-  
zers of all sorts, (especially Presbyterians) determine at their leisure; and let those in present Power take heed, <sup>they be not ridden by them too like fools,</sup> as well as their Predecessors, yea, wracked by them at the last when they have served those tares for which they set them up on horse-back, for to ride to death our Kings, Parliaments, Kingdoms, and utterly consume, devour them with our remaining Ministers, Tithes, Glebes, Uni-

\* See Militiere his V. Story of Truth, dedicat<sup>o</sup> to the King of Great Britain, to invite him to embrace the Roman Catho-  
lick Fa<sup>t</sup>h,  
1654.

To the truly Christian Reader.

verity & College Lands by Monthly endless Taxes, Excises, & a perpetual Law, Tith-oppugning, Parliament-dissolving Army, in whose Councils, we have cause to fear, the *sofisites* have been most predominant of late years, and will still make use of them to our final ruine, if not effectually purged out, and the Army new moulded, new principled, if any longer continued under pretext of publick safety, and not wholly disbanded for the peoples ease and Liberty. ♦

It is worthy observation, that *Theo. Campanella* (a) prescribbed the lowing, and continual nourishing of *Divisions, Dissensions, Discords, Sects and Schisms among us*, both in State and Church ( by the Machivilian *Plots and Policies* he suggests, punctually prosecuted among us of late years ) as the principal means to weaken, ruine both our Nation and Religion, and bring us under the Spanish and Popish yokes at last; witness his, *I AM VERO AD ENERVANDOS ANGLOS NIHIL TAM CONDUCIT QUAM DISSEN-TIO ET DISCORDIA INTER ILLOS EXCITATA PERPETUOQUE NUTRITA*, *Quod cito meliores occasio-nes suppeditabis: and that principally, by instigating the Nobles and chief Men of the Parliament of England: UT ANGLIA IN FORMAM REIPUBLICÆ REDUCANT ADIMITATIONEM HOLLANDORVM*: which our Republicans lately did by the power of the Army-Officers; or, by sowing the seeds of an inexplicable war, between England and Scotland; By making it an Elective Kingdom, ( as some now endeavour under another Notion) or by setting up Other Kings of another Race, without Legal Right, or just Title, against that ancient, unquestioned, undoubted Right and Title settled, established in King James and his Royal Posterity by Inherent Birthright, and lawfull right of Descent by God himself and his Laws, confirmed & strengthened by all possible Titles and Rights of compact, Law, Statutes, &c. 22. 31 H. 8. Oaths, personal uncontradicted custome, Protestations, Co- c. 4. 37 H. 8. venants, the solemn Publick Faith and Engagement of our c. 17. 1 Eliz. English Parliaments & Nation, for themselves, Their Heirs & c. 3. Posterities for ever, as the Statutes of 1. Iacobi c. 1. 2. 3, Iac. c. 3. 4. 7. Iac. c. 6. which both houses of Parliament in their Declaration of Nov. 2. 1642. Exact Coll. p. 705 resolve. And that upon this suggestion to the People; *Crudelem fore SCO-TIUM ubi scelus imperium in illos obninet, tenetem alt-*

\* See 25 H. 8. Oaths, personal uncontradicted custome, Protestations, Co- c. 4. 37 H. 8. venants, the solemn Publick Faith and Engagement of our c. 17. 1 Eliz. English Parliaments & Nation, for themselves, Their Heirs & c. 3. Posterities for ever, as the Statutes of 1. Iacobi c. 1. 2. 3, Iac. c. 3. 4. 7. Iac. c. 6. which both houses of Parliament in their Declaration of Nov. 2. 1642. Exact Coll. p. 705 resolve. And that upon this suggestion to the People; *Crudelem fore SCO-TIUM ubi scelus imperium in illos obninet, tenetem alt-*

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

menē reposum, quanta injuria Augli' Scotos superioribus illis  
annis afficerint. Praterea suspicinem̄ sis incisus, fore ut Jacobo-  
bus CÆDEM MATERNAM VINDICATURUS SIT, &c.  
Exsperandū sunt essam animi Episcoporū (Presbyterorū) An-  
glicorum proponendo illis REGEM SCOTIÆ Calvinismum  
amplexum esse SPE & CUPIDITATE REGNI, ADAC-  
TUMQVE VI, A BARONIBUS HÆRETICIS quod si vero  
Regnu' Anglie etiam obireat, TVM ILLVM CITO PRIO-  
REM RELIGIONEM REVOCATURUM ESSE: quando-  
quidem non solum MARIA EJVS MATER moriens, vrum  
etia' REX IPSE GALLIARVM SVMMOPORE ET RELI-  
GIONEM CATHOLICAM COMMENDARINT, &c. yet  
now transcribed almost verbatim out of \* Thomas Campanella,  
(who suggested it against King James to alienate the English  
from him, & keep him from the Crown) & very freshly by the  
Authors of, *The True State of the Case of the Commonwealth*, &c.  
p. 48, 49. objected against the present King of Scots and roya-  
lal issue, to deprive him and them from the Crowne of Eng-  
land, and engage the whole English Nation against their Title,  
to vest it in some other Family in greatest power.) Or if these  
projects should fail, then by dividing us into many Kingdoms (b) De Monar-  
chia Hispan. c.  
or Republicks, distinct one from another; and by sowing the seeds (c) See at foiss  
of Schisms, and making alterations and innovations in all Arts, Quoddibet, p.  
Sciences, and our Religion. The old Plots of (b) Campanella, 286. to 332. A  
(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu, of the Dialogue be-  
Pope, Spaniard, Jesuites, to undo, subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion, as the marginal Authors irre-  
fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yea, openly pur-  
sued, and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-  
sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for  
our greatest Patriots, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuits,  
when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards, &c. &c.

\* De Monar-  
chia Hispan. c.  
Hisp. c. 25.

(b) De Monar-  
chia Hispan. c.  
25.

(c) See at foiss  
Quoddibet, p.  
286. to 332. A  
Dialogue be-  
tween a secular  
Priest and Lay  
Gentleman,  
printed at  
Rhemes, 1601.

p. 93, 94, 95.

(d) Conte de  
Galeazzo Gual-  
do Priorato,  
Hisp. part. 3.

(4) Quoddibet  
McBride's true,  
6. Tba late (4) Jesuites by their devices and traffiques, have brought all to  
and take upon them all professions now among us.  
and  
governments, magistracy states, Prelie of publick Prelie, Prelie against Prelie, Prelie  
p. 62, 69, and Prelieutes, and making of publick Prelie, by opposition of King against King, States  
and  
6. Tba late (4) Jesuites by their devices and traffiques, have brought all to  
and take upon them all professions now among us.

versity & College Lands by Monthly endless Taxes, Excises, & a perpetual Law, Tith-oppugning, Parliament-dissolving Army, in whose Councils, we have cause to fear, the *Sesuites* have been most predominant of late years, and will still make use of them to our final ruine, if not effectually purged out, and the Army new moulded, new principled, if any longer continued under pretext of publick safety, and not wholly disbanded for the peoples ease and Liberty. \*

It is worthy observation, that *Tbo. Campanella* (a) prescribbed the sowing, and continual nourishing of *Divisions, Disfessions, Discords, Sects and Schisms among us*, both in State and Church ( by the Machivilian *Plans and Policies* he suggests, punctually prosecuted among us of late years ) as the principal means to weaken, ruine both our Nation and Religion, and bring us under the Spanish and Popish yokes at last: witness his, *JAM VERO AD ENERVANDOS ANGLOS NIHIL TAM CONDUCIT QUAM DISSEN-TIO ET DISCORDIA INTER ILLOS EXCITATA PERPETUOQUE NUTRITA*, *Quod cito meliores occasio-nes suppeditabili: and that principally, by instigating the No-bles and chief Men of the Parliament of England: ut ANGLIAM IN FORMAM REIPUBLICÆ REDUCANT ADIMITATIONEM HOLLANDORVM*: which our Republicans lately did by the power of the Army-Officers; or, by sowing the seeds of an inexplicable war, between England and Scotland; By making it an Elective Kingdom, ( as some now endeavour under another Notion) or by setting up Other Kings of another Race, without Legal Right, or just Title, against that ancient, unquestioned, undoubted Right and Title settled, established in King James and his Royal Post-erity by Inherent Birthright, and lawfull right of Des-  
cent by God himself and his Laws, confirmed & strength-  
ened by all possible Titles and Rights of compact, Law, Statutes,

\* See 25 H. 8. 22. 31 H. 8. Oaths, perpetual uncontradicted custome, Protestations, Co-  
- 4. 27 H. 8. venants, the solemn Publick Faith and Engagement of our  
c. 17. 1 Eliz. English Parliaments & Nation, for themselves, Their Heirs &  
c. 3. Posterities for ever, as the Statutes of 1 Jacob. c. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 1 ac. c.  
8. 4, 7. 1 ac. c. 6. which both houses of Parliament in their De-  
claration of Nov. 2. 1642. Exalt Collect. p. 705 resolve. And that upon this suggestion to the People; *Crudele morsa SCO-TIUM ubi semel imperium in illos obiunxit, tenetem alio-*

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

menē repositum, quātū in iuris Angli Scotor superioribus illis  
annis afficerint. Praterē suspicioneis ois incusat, fore ut Jaco-  
bus CÆDEM MATERNAM VINDICATURUS SIT, &c.  
Ex: sperandi sunt eisā animi Episcoporū (Presbyterorū) An-  
glicorum proponendo illis REGEM SGOTIÆ Calvinismū  
am; lexum esse SPE & CUPIDITATE REGNI, ADAC-  
TUMQUE VI, A BARONIBUS HÆRETICIS, quod si vero  
Regnum Anglia etiam obtineat, TVM ILLVM CITO PRIO-  
RĒM RELIGIONEM REVOCATURUM ESSE: quādā  
quidem non solum MARIA EJVS MATER moriens, viram  
niā REX IPSE GALLIARVM SYMMOPORE E RELI-  
GIONEM CATHOLICAM COMMENDARINT, &c. yet

*De Monarchia  
Hist. c. 25.*

now transcribed almost verbatim out of \* Thomas Campanella,  
(who suggested it against King James to alienate the English  
from him, & keep him from the Crown) & very freshly by the  
Authors of, *The True State of the Case of the Commonwealth*, &c.  
p. 48, 49. objected against the present King of Scots and roya-  
lal issue, to deprive him and them from the Crowne of Eng-  
land, and engage the whole English Nation against their Title, (b) *De Monar-  
chia Hispan. c.*  
to vest it in some other Family in greatest power.) Or if these 25.  
projects should fail, then b, dividing us into many Kingdoms (c) *Seeatsons  
or Republicks, distinct one from another; and by sowing the seeds  
of Schisms, and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,  
Sciences, and our Religion.* The old Plots of (b) *Campanella*,  
(c) *Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu, of the  
Pope, Spaniard, Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*, as the marginal Authors irre-  
fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,  
and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-  
sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for  
our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,  
when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all  
the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &  
pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-  
vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise  
and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall  
recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the  
memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-  
vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to  
ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-

*(b) De Monar-  
chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Parliaments, &*

*pretended reformations of our laws and Religion, through inad-*

*vertency, circumvention, or self-ended respects, as many wise*

*and godly men justly fear. For prevention whereof, I shall*

*recommend to the whole Kingdoms serious consideration, the*

*memorable Preamble of the Statute of 25 H. 8. c. 22. disco-*

*vering the like Plots of the Pope and our Forraign Enemies to*

*ruine us in former ages; and the principal remedy they pre-*

*25.*

*(b) De Monar-*

*chia Hispan. c.*

25.

(c) *Seeatsons*

*or Republicks,*

*distinct one from another;*

*and by sowing the seeds*

*of Schisms,*

*and making alterations and innovations in all Arts,*

*Sciences, and our Religion.*

*The old Plots of (b) Campanella,*

*(c) Parsons, and late designs of (d) Cardinal Richelieu,*

*of the*

*Pope, Spaniard,*

*Jesuites, &c. to subvert our Protestant Church-  
es, Kings, Kingdoms and Religion*

*as the marginal Authors irre-*

*fragably evidence: yet all visibly set on foot, yet, openly pursued,*

*and in a great measure accomplished by some late, nay pre-*

*sent Grandees and Army-Officers, who cry up themselves for*

*our greatest Patrons, Preservers, Deliverers, and Anti-Jesuites,*

*when they have rather been but the \* Jesuites, Popes, Spani-  
ards and other Forraign enemies instruments and factors, in all*

*the late changes, new-models of our Government, Par*

Note.

Note.

Note.

scribed, to prevent them for the future, in these ensuing words. *In their most humble wise shewed unto your Majestie, Your most humble and obedient Subjects the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons in this present Parliament assembled: that since it is the natural inclination of every man, gladly and willingly to provide for the surety, both of his Title and Succession, although it touch his only private cause: We therefore, most righteous and dreadful Sovereign Lord, reckon our selves much more bounden to beseech and instant your Highness, although no doubt nor of your Princely heart and wisdom, mixed with a natural affection to the same, to forsee and provide for the perfect surety of both you and of your most lawfull Succession and heirs, upon which dependeth all our joy & wealth, in whom also is unied and knyt, the only most true inheritance and title of this Realm, without any contradiction: Wherefore, we your said most humble and obedient Subjects in this present Parliament assembled, calling to our mind the great divisions, which in times past have been in this Realm, by reason of several Titles pretended to the Imperial Crown of the same; which sometimes, and for the most pa. ri, ensu'd by occasion of ambiguity and doubts, then not so perfectly declared, but that men mighe upon froward intents expound them to every mans sinister appetite and affection, after their fense, contrary to the right Legality of the Succession and Posterity of the lawfull Kings & Emperors of this Realm, whereof hath ensued great evill & destruction of mans blood, as well of a great number of the Nobles, as of other Subjects, and specially Inheritors in the same. And the greatest occasion hath been, because no perfect & substantial provision by law hath bin made within this realm it self, when doubtes and questions have been moved, & proposed of the certainty & legality of the Succession & posterity of the Crown. By reason whereof, The Bishop of Roma, & See Apostolick, contrary to the great and inviolable grants of Jurisdictions by God immediately to Emperours, Kings & Princes in succession to their heirs, hath presumed in time past, to invent who should please them to inherit in other mens Kingdome & Dominions, which thing, we your most humble Subjects, both Spiritual and Temporal, do most altho. & detest: And sometimes other forraign Princes and Potentates of sundry degrees, minding rather dissencion & discord to continue in the realm, to th'utter desolatiō therof, then charity, equity, or unitie, have many*

many times supposed wrong titles, whereby they might easily & facilly aspire to the Superiority of the same, the continuance & sufferance whereof deeply considered & pondered, were too dangerous and perilous to be suffered any longer within this Realm, & to much contrary to the unity, peace and tranquillity of the same, being greatly reproachful and dishonourable to the whole Realm. *In consideration whereof, your said most humble and obedient Subjects, the Nobles and Commons of this Realm, calling further to their remembrance, that the good, unity, peace, and wealth of this Realm, and the succession of the Subjects of the same, most specially & principally above all worldly things,* Note.

*consisteth and resteth in the certainty and surety of the p[ro]-creation, & posterity of your Highness, in whose most royal person at this present time, is no manner of doubt or question, Do therefore most humbly beseech your Highnes, &c. to declare the establishment of the succession of your royal posterity in the Imperial Crowns of this realm: as he and they did by this & other succeeding acts of Parl. & in 1 Eliz. c. 3. & 1 Jac. c. 1. to prevent the like civil wars and mischiefs for succeeding ages, now revived, promoted by the Pope, Jesuits, & Foreign Popish Princes to work our ruine.*

Certainly, whosoever shall seriously ponder the premises, with these passages in *William Watsons Quodlibets concerning the Jesuits*, (e) 1. That some (e) Quodlib. 3. of the Jesuits society have infested themselves into all the Princes Courts of as. 4. p. 65. 41. Christendom, where some of their Intelligencers reside, and set up a secret council, of purpose to receive and give intelligence to their General at Rome, of the secrets of their Sovereigns, and of all occurrents in those parts of the world, which they dispatch to and fro by such cyphers, which are to themselves best, but commonly only to themselves known, so that nothing is done in England, but it is known at Rome within a month after at least, & *Note.*

*reply made back as occasion is offered, to the consequent overthrow of their own natural Country of England, and their native Princes and Realms, by their unnatural Treasons against them; that so the Jesuits might be those long gowns, which should reign and govern the Island of Great Britain.* To which I shall add that of Rob: Turner an English Jesuit, in his Epistles printed at Ingolstadt, An. 1584. Ep. 19. *Volui irreperire, volui rumpere in intimis Aulæ Principum, volui videre omnia, ut ad Justitiam normam præclare exigerem. Vix capram olive Principum Aulæ, cum viderim Hæreticorum illius Mundum ADMINISTRARI A STULTIS, &c. with that of Hophnian, Historia Jesuitica 1. 3. p. 148. That the Jesuits are so subtil, vigilant, bold, laborious, and indeed with such a faculty of flattery, insuuation, asting and basting in Princes Courts, that they exactly discover, know, and ffe off all their secretes, ( which they reveal to their Superiors, the Pope and Spaniard) and alone rule all things in them: so that the Courts of Europe are more grievously infested & afflicted by the Jesuits, than the Court of Pharaoh was of old by the Egyptian Frogs. And may we not (f) Quodlibets then justly fear our new Court hath been as much pestered and infest- p. 39. 209, 233, ed by them of late years, as our old Court heretofore? 234, 305, 306,*

*so (f) That the Jesuits hope and endeavour to have England, Scotland 307, 309.*

To the truly Christian Reader,

and lie land under them, to make these Northern Islands a Japonian Land of Jesuites, and one Jesuitical Monarchy; and to insoofe themselves by hook or by crook. In the whole imperial Dominion of great Britain with the remainder over to their Corporation, or puni-Fathers succeeding them, as heirs specially in their society, by a sorte of perpetuity: Putting all the whole Blood Royal of England to the Formidon, As but Heirs general in one Predicament together, as now they have done.

(g) Quodlibets p. 11, 12, 14, 16, 17, 42, 43, 283, 285; them odious and contemptible to the People, full of plots, exasperations &c, 332, 333. against the Church and Commonwealth, like rebellious Traytors, to bring all into an uproar, that they may have all Countries, Kingdoms, Governments, Successions, States, Inhabitants, and all at their pleasure.

3. (g) That the jesuites have Magistracy, Kings, Magistrates, Ministers, Preliehood, and Priests in high contempt; publishing many slanderous, sediticous, &c, 295 to 313. jets are bound no longer to obey wicked or heretical Princes and Kings, they be able by force of arms to resist and depose them. That the popular multitude, 286, 287, tude may upon these grounds, when they think meet, place and displace their See the Right-Princes and chief Officers at their pleasure, as men may do their Tenants at will, hirelings, or ordinary Servants, putting no difference in their choice of the Prelate

4. That the (b) Jesuites have taught the people (in order to get England under their power, and in order to God or Religion, as they file it,) That Subject-man, An. 1601. jets shall approve it, By this all things must be wrought and framed, conformable to opportunities of times and occasions; as for example: The people must have a right and interest in them, and to doe what they list in choice of their Kings and Supreme Governors, till they have set such a person or usurper in the Crown, as they for their ends have designed; and then the times and occasions changing, when such a one is felled in the Throne, the former doctrine and practices must be holden FOR A MISTAKING; yet such, as seeing it cannot be halpen, the people must beware hereafter of attempting the like again. By this a check must be given to the publishers of such paradoxes, (when they have accomplished their designed ends,) after that a dispensation procured for the Offenders, and then all shall be well ever after; till a new opportunity for their further advantage.

(b) Quodlibets

\*See I. E. his Treatise of the Rights and Jurisdiction of the Prelat & Prince, printed 1616. & re-printed 1621, by the Jesuits.

(i) Quodlibets p. 26.

(k) Quodlibets p. 62, 69, and elsewhere.

5. That the (i) Jesuites by absurd equivocations, counterfeited perjuries, Sacrileges, and coufesse, become all things to all men, that they may gain all; as to be Seminary Priests amongst Seminaries; Secular Priests, among Seculars; Religious men, among Religious; Sedulous men among Seditous; Factious Spaniards amongst Spaniards; ENGLISH TRAYTORS AMONG SCOTISH VILAINS, AMONG SCOTS, &c, and among all these, to deny and affirm, to object and answer, to swear and forswear, whatsoever may be a gain to them, for their pragmatical Commonwealth and society. No maner then, if they transform themselves into all shapes, and take upon them all professions now amongst us.

6. That the (k) Jesuites by their devices and practices, have brought all to Machiavels rule, DIVIDE ET IMPERA, in sowing division, breeding of jealousies, and making of hostile strife, by opposition of King against King, State against State, Priest against Priest, Peter against Peter, Parson against child.

children, children against parents, sisters against brothers, servants against masters, wives against husbands, husbands against wives, and one friend against another, raising up rebellions, MVRDRING OF PRINCES, making uproars every where, until they make those they cannot otherwise winne unto them, either yield to be their vassals to live quiet by them, or force them to flight, or drive them out of their wits, or otherwise plague them to death.

7. That the <sup>(1)</sup> Jesuits by their cursed positions, and machiavillian practises, have made religion it self a meer political and atheistical device; a pragmatrical science of Figboys, and but an art of such as live by their wits, and the principles of Machiavelli taught by their Rabbles, yea, a very horribel patch of omnium gatherum, religious, secular, clerical, laical, ecclesiastical, spiritual, temporal, MARTIAL, civil, ecumenical, political, liberal, mechanical, municipal, irregular, and ALL WITHOUT ORDER; so that they are not worthy to be called religious, ecclesiasticks, catholicks, nor temporal mechanical Christians; but rather Machiavilians, Atheists, Apostates; their course of life shewing what their study is; and that how soever they boast of their perfections, holiness, meditations, and exercisers, ( as if they were all Superlatives, all Metaphysicians, all entia transcendentia) yet their platform is heathenish, tyrannical, farhannical, able to set Aretine, Euclian, Machiavel, yea, and Don Lucifer, in a sort to school.

Those, I say, who shall sadly ponder all these premises, and compare them with the late practises, policies and proceedings of some swaying politicians of our age ( infected likewise with this Atheistical State-Maxime, amongst others derived from the Jesuits, and Machiavillian Spanish State-Counsellors: ) *In Republica administratione quedam LICITA ESSE RATIONE STATVS; alia respectu Conscientia: which* \* Thomas Campanella ( as bad as he is ) not only severely censures, but thus declaims against with highest derestation, *Qua opinione profecto NIHIL MAGIS AB SVRDVM AVI IMPIIVM ne excogitari quidem potest: Nam quis conscientia universalem suam jurisdictionem in omnes humanas TAM PVBLICAS QVAM PRIVATAS,* <sup>De Menar-  
chia H. p. c. 32. p. 297, 298.</sup>

substrahit, ostendit, SE NEC CONSCIENTIAM, NEC DEV-  
VM HABERE, &c. *Siquidem omnia scandala Ecclesia Dni,*  
& PERTVRBATIONES ORBIS TERRARVM, INDE  
ORTA SVNT: that men may do against all Laws of God  
and Man, their own Consciences, Trusts, Oaths, out of a  
pretext of the benefit, safety of the State, & publick good, as  
most now do; Or, compare thē with the constitution of our  
Church, State, Religion, publike affairs, must needs acknow-  
ledg, that these pragmatrical Jesuits have bin very active, pre-  
valent, powerful, successful, and not only *militant* but *tri-  
umphant*, of late years amongst us, under some disguise or  
other: that they have dangerously poysoned us with these  
their *Machiavillian* and *atheal* policies, practises positions,  
and have more real *Disciples*, *Faithers*, if not *Tutors*, now a-  
mongst us, then in any former ages: And is it not high time  
then to endeavour to detect their persons, and prevent their  
dangerous designs upon us, with greatest care and diligence?  
Truly though most others be negligent and fearfull herein,  
yet that text of *Ezak. 2. 6, 7.* And thou son of man, be  
not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though  
bryars and thorns be with thee, and thou dost dwell among  
scorpions, be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their  
looks, though they be a rebellious house. And thou shal speak  
my words unto them, whether they will hear, or whether they  
will forbear, for they are most REBELLIOVS; hath anima-  
ted me to exhortate my conscience herein, and to say  
with the prophet, *Isai. 62. 15.* For Zions (Englands) sake  
I will not hold my peace, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not  
rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness,  
and the salvation thereof as a Lamp that burneth. Wherefore,

Upon serious consideration of all these Premises, and of  
all those Sacred Solemn Oaths, that Protestant, *Yom, League,*  
and *National Covenant*, which I have formerly taken (lying  
still as so many<sup>1</sup>) (f) indissoluble Obligations on my Soul,  
(f) Josh. 9.  
19, 20. & Psal. 89.  
34. Psal. 15. 4. Heb. 6.  
27, 18. notwithstanding the ingrate, malicious, unchristian Requi-  
sits of all my former unmercenary services, Sufferings for Rel-  
igion, Laws, Liberties, and the publique, in times of greatest  
Danger, recompenced only with long causeless, close imprin-  
son-

sonments, injuries, affronts, losses of all kinds, by pretended friends and Patrons of our Liberties, as well as by professed causeless Enemies. And notwithstanding all other Discouragements from the general baseness, cowardise, Sottishness, slavishness, degenerated Spirits of the whole Nation, and their strange fearfulness even publicuely to own, much less cordially, to assist, defend, ( according to the sixth Article of the Covenant ) those few courageous Patrons who have hazarded their Lives, Liberties, Limbs, Estates, and all earthly comforts for the publique defence of our Religion, the Laws, Liberties, Priviledges of our Kingdom, Church, Parliament, against the old and late avowed subverters of them, whose very ( g ) Company, visits the generality of their former friends and acquaintance have declin'd, ( as if they had some plague sore on them;) not only during their late restraints, but likewise since their enlargements out of them, ( enough to perswade them never to write, speak, act, or suffer any thing more, for such ingrate, unworthy Creatures, but rather to put their helping hands, to make them and their Posterities slaves for ever.) I have yet once more, out of pure zeal, love, conscience towards my native Country, adventured my life, liberty, and decayed estate, (considering the lawlessness and Danger of the times, not the justice and goodness of the Common Cause, I plead) for the necessary defence of the Fundamental Liberties, Franchises, Lawes, Rights, Parliaments, Priviledges, and Government of our enslaved Nation, ( thought every way \* unworthy to be beloved by God, or men of noble spirits ) in this Seasonable, Legal, Historical Vindication and Collection; wherein I have with all boldness, faithfulness, without the least fear or flattery of any Mortals or created powers whatsoever, argued, evinced, maintained my own particular, with the whole Nations publique rights and inheritance in them, ( of which few or none take any care, but only of their own private gains, use, safety, though with the <sup>†</sup> Publike ~~the~~ <sup>um esse existimat qui R. m. publicam curat, eis pro seipso</sup> <sup>perpetiat. Itaq. eadem omnium privatorum opinione undicam. R. m. publicam perdi, non animadvertisi.</sup> Thucydides H. St. I. I. p. g. 110.

(g) When our Saviour himself was apprehended, carried away prisoner, and like to be crucified, all his Disciples forsook him, and fled, and Peter denied him with an oath, Mat. 26. 56. 70. to 75. And at Pauls first appearance before Nero, no man stood with him, but all men forsook him, I pray God it be not laid to their charge, 2 Tim. 4. 9. 16. And so it is now with most publike sufferers.

\* Zeph 2. 1.  
† unusquisque majorum temporis sui parte in uestibus privatis curandis ponit, & Rem publicam nihil detrimenti ex hac sua negligenter capere posse putat, sed & aliquam alium esse existimat qui R. m. publicam curat, eis pro seipso

them and our Religion from the several Jesuitical plots, counsels, specified in the whole Commons House Remonstrance of 15 December 1641. Exact Collection, p 3. to 14. of late years revived, and more vigorously pursued than ever, and to rescue them out of the Claws of Tyranny, and all usurping arbitrary powers, which have avowedly encroached on, yea trampled them under feet of late, more than ever the worst of all our Monarchs, or beheaded King did, though declaimed against, as the greatest of Tyrants by some who have transcended him in his worst Regal Exorbitances; and particularly in this, which the Lords and Commons in Parliament, in their \* Declaration of Aug. 4. 1642, thus grievously complained of, and objected against the Kings ill Counsellors, 'That the LAWS, were no protection or defence of any mans right, all was subject to will and power, which imposed WHAT PAYMENTS THEY THOUGHT FIT, to drain the Subjects purses, and supply THOSE NECESSITIES, which their ill counsel had brought upon the King, and gratify such as were instrumental in promoting most ILLEGAL and OPRESSIVE COURSES. Those who yielded and complied were countenanced and advanced, all others disgraced and kept under, ( and are they not so now, as much as then? ) that to their minds made poor and base, ( as they were never so poor and base as now ) and THEIR LIBERTIES lost and gone ( as they were never so much as now ) they might be ready to \* LET GO THEIR RELIGION whensoever it should be resolved to alter it, which was, and still is, the GREAT DESIGN, and all the rest made use of as instrumental and subservient to it. Upon which consideration they thus concluded that Declaration, 'Therefore we the Lords and Commons are resolved, to expose our lives and fortunes for the defence and maintenance of the true Religion, the Kings person, honor and estate, the power and priviledge of Parliament, the just rights and liberty of the Subject, And we do hereby require all those who have any sense of piety, honor or compassion, To HELP \* A DISTRESSFD STATE, especially SVCH WHO HAVE

\* Exact Coll. p.492. 497.  
494.

\* Are they not now more ready to let it go, than ever? & have not thousands done it?

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

' HAVE TAKEN THE PROFESSION, and are  
' bound in the same duty with us unto their God, their King  
' and Country, to come into their aid and assistance.

That which hath not a little encouraged me hereunto, is  
not only this their publick call, but likewise this memor-  
able passage, v. w. protestation of the *Lords and Commons as-*  
*sembled in Parliament*, in their printed (b) Declaration in  
answer to his Majesties of October 23. 1642. Which I fear  
most of them since in power have quite forgotten; and  
therefore I beseech them now seriously to remember it.

*Though we know very well, there are too many of the Gentry  
of this Kingdom, who to satisfy the LVSTS OF THEIR  
OWN AMBITION, are content, like Esau, TO SELL  
THEIR BIRTH-RIGHT, AND CARE NOT TO SUB-  
MIT THEMSELVES TO ANY ARBITRARY AND  
UNLIMITED GOVERNMENT, so they may FOR  
THEIR OWN TIME PARTAKE OF THAT POW-*

*ER, to trample and insult over others: ( And have not,  
are not some of these declarers and censures such them-  
selves? ) yet we are assured, that there are of the Gen-  
try many worthy and true hearted Patriots, (but where  
are those many now?) who are ready to lay down their  
lives and fortunes, and of late have given ample testi-  
mony thereof, for maintenance of their Lawes, Liberties,  
and Religion; and with them and others of their resolu-  
tion we shall be ready to live and die. ( But how many  
of these Declarers have made good this publike engage-  
ment? yet, have not some of them been, and still are  
more ready to securse, seclude, disoffice, imprison, kill, flay  
any such true-hearted Patrons, as I have felt by sad ex-  
perience, than to live and die with them?) And we must own*

*it as our duty, to use our best endeavors, that the meanest  
of the Commonalty may enjoy their own Birth-rights,  
Freedom and Liberty of the *Laws* of the Land, being  
equally entitled thereto with the greatest Subject. I \* Note,*

*trust*

(b) Exact col.  
p. 650. 659.  
660.

*Note.*

*Note.*

trons in the Nation, who bear any love to the Laws, Liberties, Freedom of the people, for which their Ancestors and they have so long, so stoutly contended heretofore, and lately with our Kings; *will live and die with me* in this their *Vindication and Defence*, against any of their fellow-Subjects, who shall endeavor to subvert or deprive them of the full and free enjoyment of all or any of them, according to this Engagement and Declaration: Wherein there are these further observable passages, relating to the Parliaments privileges and its Members, which I desire our *Army-Grandeers*, who impeached, secured, secluded my self with other Members of the last true Parliament, levied war against and forcibly dissolved it; with the Controvers of our late New-Modelled Governments, would seriously ponder; who in common justice must be content to be as freely told of and reprehended for their *frauds, faults* in print (where the publike and every mans private interest, Right, Liberty, Security, is concerned) as they have censured others, as well their Superiors, as Equalls, oft in print, though perchance *lesse peccant than themselves* (i) in that they object against them. (k) For the matter of his Majesties raising an Army against the Parliament (wherein many Papists, Priests, Jesuites were employed) and taking away the providege thereof, we shall refer it to the judgement of every ordinary capacity, whether it be void of sense to say, that this War is raised against the Parliament: But the truth is, that it is not a few persons, but the Parliament it self, is the thorn that lies in these mens sides, which, heretofore when it was wont to prick them, was with much ease (by a sudden dissolution) pulled out: But now that it more deeply fastned by the Act of Continuance, they would force it out by the power of an Army. (Hath not this been the very practise of some *Army-Grandeers* of late, here objected against the King Jesitical and Popish ill Counsellors?) And whoever will peruse the several Speeches and Declarations, made upon the breaking up of former Parliaments; since the beginning of his Majesties Reign, will find the pretences of those unjust and illegal Dissolutions, to be grounded upon the exceptions

\* *Fraudes pro-  
pemediti omnes ab  
atq; in jactu ab  
Ambitione &  
Avaritia profi-  
ciscantur. Arist.  
Polit. l. 2.  
c. 7.*

(i) See the Armies old & new Declarations against the Parliament, & Members. Their True state of the Commonwealth &c. which, mutatio nominis, is but a direct Arraignment of themselves under the name of others.

(k) Exact col. p. 652. 654. 655. &c.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

exceptions against some particular Members, under the name of a few factious and seditious persons: so that the aspersing and wounding of the Parliament through the sides of a few Members, is none <sup>new</sup> invention: (And hath not this been the very Army-Officers practise, since the first year of their reign till now, to wound the last real Parliament; yea, their own late dissolved *Meet Parliaments* since, through the sides of a few corrupt Members, or a corrupt Majority in the House, as all their Printed (1) Declarations upon their dissolutions attest. And is this then no crime? or no Jesuical practise in them, though such in the late (2) King and his ill Counsellors?) And for the satisfaction of all indifferent men, that this War is raised against the Parliament, we shall refer them to former Declarations, issued out in His Majesties name, being so many invectives and groundlesse accusations, not against particular Members only, but against the Vote and proceedings of both Houses. (And are not many of the Armies Declarations in 1647. and 1648. yea, the late Pamphlet of some present Grandees, intituled, *A True State of the Case of the Commonwealth of England*, Printed 1654. Such? let them now then see whence they took their pattern, even from the beheaded Kings (3) Jesuical evil Counsellors, whose steps they exactly trace in this: ) But if this truth were, as that Declaration seems to imply, That this Army is raised to force some (4) particular Members of this Parliament to be delivered up, yet upon that ground would it follow, that the same is levied against the Parliament. For it cannot be denied by any ingenuous man, but that the Parliament by their (5) inherent rights and priviledges hath the power to judge and punish their own Members: [ yet the Army Officers took upon them to secure, seclude them without Charge, and their future New-minted Parliament Members, though only elected by the People, must be tryed, judged by the new Whitehall Members, etc they can be admitted to sit, Article 21 of the New Government: ] And we have often declared to His Majestie and the World, That we are always ready to receive any evidence or accusations

(1) See their declarations in May, June, July, Aug. 1647

in Novemb. Decemb. Jan. 1648. An.

1651, & 1653. & their True state of the

Commonwealth of England, &c. p. 4. to 35. Ann. 1654.

with some other Papers & Speeches, since

(2) Exact collect. p. 32. 4. to 16.

(3) Exact col. p. 3. 4. to 16. 651, 652, 653. Nota.

(4) If one Member suffer, all the Members suffer with it, 1 Cor. 12. 26.

(5) See Cooks 4 Insti. c. 1. p. 15, 16, 17, 23. 24, 25, and my Plea for the Lords.

( q ) Nor yet against any of them , and to judge and punish them according to their demerits; yet hitherto ( q ) no evidence produced, no Accuser appearing : And yet notwithstanding, to raise an Army to compel the Parliament to expose those Membersto the fury of those wicked Counsellors , that thirst for nothing more than the ruine of them and the Commonwealth : What can be more evident , than that the same is levied against the Parliament ? For did they prevail in this, then by the same reason ( pray observe it ) They might demand 20 more , and never rest satisfied until their malice and Tyrany did devour all those Members they found crose and opposite to their lewd and wicked designs [ And was not this the practice of the Army-Officers , who levied a real actual War against the Parliament ? They first impeached , secluded xi. Members of the Commons-House ; and some Lords soon after. An. 1647. then they secluded other Members , by their high Declaration of Aug. 18. 1647. after that they secured imprisoned my self , with 44 Members more , and secluded the greatest part of the Commons House, leaving not above 50 or 60 at first sitting , who confederated with them , in December 1648. within two moneths after this , they beheaded the King ; then suppressed the whole Lords House, to carry on their designs since acted : At last they dissolved their own Mock-Parliaments , when they crossed their ambitious aspires : What they did in September last since this was first penned to those now sitting , is fresh in memory . ] Touching the Privileges of Parliament , which the contrivers of that Declaration in his Majesties name , ( and the Contrivers of sundry Declarations since in the Armies name , who imitated them herein. ) seem to be so tender of , and to profess all conformity unto , and deny this Army to be raised in any degree to violate : we shall appeal to the judgement of any indifferent man , how little truth is contained in this their assertion . ( or in the Army Officers printed Papers to the same effect . )

\* See that of June 14. of Aug. 2 & 18. 1647 , and the Letters of July 29. 1647. The Declarations of Nov. 16. Dec. 6. 1648.

The Parliament is to be considered in three severall respects : First, As a Councell to advise. Secondly, As a Court

Court to judge. 3. As it is the body representative of the whole Kingdom, to make, repeal, or alter Laws: and whether the Parliament hath enjoyed its priviledges in any of these respects (*under the Army-Officers and powers, as well as late King*) let any that hath eyes open judge.

For the first, We dare appeal even to the Consciences of the Contrivers themselves, (and to the consciences of the Army-Officers, Souldiers, and Whitehall men themselves) whether matters of the highest importance, ( witness all the publick proceedings against the late Parliament, King, Peers, Government, the Warrs with Scotland, Holland: their new *Magna Charta*, repealing the old, Entituled, *The Government of the Commonwealth of England, Scotland and Ireland*, wherein they take upon them such an Omnipotent Sovereign power, as, To pass a decree upon the wavering humors of the people, and to say to this Nation, (*yea to Scotland and Ireland too.*) As the Almighty himself laid once to the unruly Sea, \* *Here shall be thy bounds, hitherto shalt thou come and no further;* as some of them most arrogantly, if not blasphemously publish in print to all the world in their *True State of the Case of the Commonwealth*, p. 34. Their making of new binding Laws and Ordinances, repealing old Laws and Statutes in and by pretext of this Instrument, out of Parliament, as their manifold Whitehall Folio new Edicts, amounting to near 700 pages, attest) *have not been agitated and determined* (in and by the Army-Officers, General Council, and other unparliamentary Juncto's,) *not only without*, but contrary to their Advice, (and Votes too;) and whether private unknown Councils (in the Army, Whitehall, and elsewhere, yea the private Councils, Plots, conspiracies of *Isuits*, of *Foreign Popish and Spanish Agents*) have not been hearkned unto, approved and followed, when the Faithful and wholsome advice of the great *Confest* hath been scorned & neglected (by the Army Officers and their Confederates.) And yet none can deny, but it is one of the Principle ends why a Parliament is called, To Consult the great Affairs of the Church and State. And what miserable effects and sad events, this neglect

\* Job 38. 11.

left of the great Council, and preferring of unknown and private Councils before it, hath produced; let the present Distractions of this Kingdom bear witness, ( with all the bloody, unchristian Wars, Taxes, Oppressions, Distractions, since the Armies force upon the King, Members, Houses, Anno 1647, and 1648, to this present time. )

Concerning the Secord, it sufficiently appears by the making the Kings Court, by the Force and Power of the Kings Army, the Sanctuary and refuge of All sorts of Delinquents against the Parliament and Kingdom, and protecting and defending them from the Justice thereof; and by admitting such to beat places of great trust in the Army, and so stand in defiance of the Parliament and the Authority thereof; ( and is it not a far greater crime to make the Parliaments Army it self, a Delinquent against the Parliament and Kingdom; the sanctuary of such Delinquents against both, and to continue such Officers in places of greatest trust in the Army, who have levied actual war against the Parliament, secluded, secured members of Parliament, kept divers years under their armed guards in defiance of the Parliament, without any particular Charge or Impeachment, refusing to release them, even when the Serjeant was sent at first from the House it self, to demand the Members seized? )

By all which it is apparent, how our Priviledges have been torn from us by piece-meals, from time to time. And we might mention many passages, whereby they were endeavoured to be pulled up by the root, and totally subverted. As the attempt to bring up the late Army from the North to force Conditions upon the Parliament: His Majesties Letters, and Commands to the Members of both trippes ( which found obedience in a great many ) to attend him at York; and so, By depriving the Parliament of their Members, destroy the whole Body: ( And was not the actual twice bringing up of the Parliaments own Army, by the Army Officers, against the Parliament it self, to impeach, secure some principal Members of both Houses; seclude the Majority of the Commons House, suppress the whole House of Lords; break off the Treaty, behead the King,

\* And are they not for now, almost past hopes of any future re-planting?

( the

and all Zealous Protestant Freedmen of England.

(the "Head of the Parliament") against the Parliaments Votes, alter the Government, force conditions on the Parliament it self, to omit the 12, 21, 24, 32, 37, 38, 39 Articles of their *New Government*, with the excluding of all the Members lately admitted by Armed Souldiers, till they took a New Engagement, and keeping out all others) a taking of the *Privileges* of the Parliament from them all by *Whole-saile*, and a more desperate pulling up by the Roots, and *total subversion* of all the Priviledges and whole Body of the Parliament, than this objected against the Northern Army, or the King's Jesuitical ill Council ?) Which is enough to prove the vanity of the Contrivers of that Declaration (and of the Army Officers too) to feed themselves with hope of belief, That the Priviledges of Parliament are not Violated, but intended to be preserved, with all due observance.

Concerning the Allegation, That the Army raised by the Parliament, is to murder the KING, ( oft alledged by the \* King and his Party, in many printed PROCLAMATIONS, Declarations before and after this here mentioned ) We hoped the Contrivers of that Declaration, or any that professed but the name of a Christian, could not have so little charity as to raise such a SCANDAL, especially when they must needs know, the \* Protestantism taken by every Member of both Houses (and Army Officers too) whereby they promise in the presence of Almighty God, TO DEFEND HIS MAJESTIES PERSON. The Promise and Protestantism made by the Members of both Houses upon the nomination of the Earl of Essex to be General, and to live and die with him; wherein is expressed, THAT THIS ARMY WAS RAISED FOR DEFENCE OF THE KINGS PERSON, Our oft, earnest, and most humble Address to his Majesty to leave that desperate and dangerous Army, &c. A request inconsistent with any purpose to offer the least violence to His Person, which hath, and \* ever shall be dear unto us.

And concerning the imputation laid to our Charge, of Raising this Army, to Alter the whole Frame of Government and Established Laws of the Land, ( which the King

<sup>\* Modus tenendi</sup>  
<sup>Parliamentum.</sup>  
Cook 4.  
Instit. c. 1.

Exact Coll.  
p. 550, 595.  
321, 322, 364.  
618, 894, 895.  
919, 920.  
Collection of  
Ordinances, p.  
28, 39, 116.

117.  
\* Let those  
who took it,  
remember  
their violati-  
ons of it, &  
repent,  
See Exact  
Collect. p.  
497, 498.

\* Was this ve-  
rified by ma-  
ny of these  
Remon-  
strants?

<sup>Exact Coll.</sup> P. 162, 282.  
<sup>2</sup> 84, 10 289.  
<sup>2</sup> 97, 298, 490.  
424, 500, 502.  
404, 514, 517.  
521, 522, 526.  
528, 530, 531.  
534, 550, 551.  
554, 558, 561.  
564, 574. A Collection, p.  
117, 452, 453.

‘ and his party \* frequently objected in print ) We shall need give no other Answer but this : That the Army Raised by the Parliament is to no other end, but for the Preservation of his Majesties Person, to Defend themselves, the Laws of the Land, and the true Protestant Religion. After which, they there and elsewhere conclude. ‘ And by this time we doubt not ) but every man doth plainly discern through the Mask and Visard of their Hypocrisie, what their ( the Kings ill Counsels ) design is, To Subject both King and Parliament and Kingdom to their needy, Ambitious, and Avaritious Spirits, and to the violent Laws, Martial Law, of Governing the People by guards and by the Souldiers.

But alas for grief, how superlatively have many of the Army Officers, and their confederate members ( though parties to these *Declarations and Protestations* ) violated them, and both Houses Faiths, Trusts, intentions, ends in raising the Army, in every of these particulars ? How have they verified, justified the Kings *Declarations, Jealousies*, concerning the Parliaments Army, in every point, here ( and \* elsewhere ) disclaimed by both Houses ? How have they exceeded, out-acted the Kings *Jesuitical Counsellors*, and most desperate *Popish Army*, in violating, subverting both the Parliaments Priviledges, Members and Parliaments themselves, together with our \* *Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Government* ; for whose preservation they were only raised, paid ? How have they pursued the Kings and his worst *Jesuited Counsellors* footsteps in all the charges here objected against them by both Houses, in relation to the Parliaments priviledges, Members, Constitution, Rights, Laws, to their utter subversion, dissolution, and waged war against them ? And doth not every man plainly discern through the Mask and Visard of their Hypocrisie, ( to use both Houses expressions ) that their design is just the same with that here objected by the Parliament to the Kings ill *Jesuited Counsellors*, and *Popish army* ; even to subject both King, Parliament and Kingdom, to their needy, ambitious, avaritious Spirits, and to the violent Laws, martial Law, of Governing

<sup>Exact Coll.</sup> p. 688, 689.  
696, 697.

<sup>\* So stiled,</sup>  
Exact Col. p. 4. 12. 34. 61.  
243, 262, 321.  
500, 502, in  
the Deck, of  
the Lords &  
Commons  
concerning  
His Majesties  
Proclamatio,  
June 6, 1642.  
p. 4. besides  
the authorities  
in the 1. chap.

she

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

the People, ( yea Parliaments themselves ) by Guards, and by  
the Soldiers ? and \* By Conquest to establish an absolute  
and unlimited power over the Parliament and good Sub-  
jects of this Kingdom ; as the Houses \* elsewhere thrice ob-  
jected against the late King, his Army and party : being the p. 617. 631,  
very design ( as many wisemen fear ) of the 27 Article of 730.  
their *New Government* ; to settle a "constant Annual re-  
venue for the maintenance of 20000 Foot, & 10000 Horse  
and Dragoones, ( to be alwayes constantly, kept up Win-  
ter and Summer, without disbanding or diminution ) for  
the Defence and Security of *England, Scotland, and Ire-*  
*land*? Which must henceforth be kept under by *Mercenary*  
*Forces*, to guard of *Protectors*, when as the \* *Heathen Poet* \* *House*,  
assures us, *Integre vita scel. risq; parsu, non egat Matri jacu-*  
*lis nec arcu* ; much les our *English Nation*, ever formerly se-  
cured by their *owne unmercenary* *Militia of the Trained*  
*Bands*, and those Lords and Gentlemen who hold their  
Lands by Knight-service. O that they would now in the  
name and fear of God ( as they tender the eternal salvati-  
on of their Souls, the honour and priviledges of all future  
Parliaments, the ease, welfare, settlement of our Nation )  
Lay all this most seriously to their Hearts, and make it a  
matter of their *greatest lamentation*, and repentance ! Be-  
sides this, have they not falsified that memorable \* late  
*Declaration of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parlia-*  
*ment, Novemb. 2. 1642.* in Answer to his *Majesties* ( well  
worthy perusal now ) and made good ( both for the time  
past, and all succeeding Parliaments, whiles there shall  
be any standing Army in *England* able to over-power  
them ) all the *odious, scandalous positions*, in relation to  
the *English Parliament*, its *Members* and priviledges ( de-  
duced from the Kings *Declaration*, only by inference, but  
disclaimed by the King ) summed up by them, in the close  
of that *Remonstrance*, and published in these ensuing  
terms, as will evidently appear, if applied to the *Army*,  
and their *Generall Council of Officers*, by adding or  
exchanging their names, only for the *Kings* in a paren-  
thesis ?

I.\* That:

\* Exact Col.  
p. 686, to 730.

To the truly Christian Reader,

\* Exact coll.

p. 729.

See their De-

clarations &

Papers of Aug.

7. 1647. D. c. 7.

& Jan. 3. 1648

where they

thus Declare

and brand

them.

\* Quod pluri-

bus vixum pro-

batumque fue-

rit, id in OM-

NIBUS RE-

BUS-PUB-

LICIS VA-

LET. In O-

ligarchia enim

4. Rot. Parl. n.

22, 23, 36, 48,

66, 70. 113. 39 H.

c. 1. &

Democracy,

Grandees,

and all illegitimate Parliaments, where they

qui Rempubli-

cam gerunt,

MAJORI

PARTIS

PLACUE-

RT, i. e. RA

TUM AC

FIRMUM.

1. Politicorum

4. c. 8. See

33 H. 8. c.

27.

2. That his Majesty (the Army and their General Council) may declare what is the known Law of the Land, against the judgement of the Highest Court, and consequently of all his Courts: So that the safety and right of King and people, and THE LAW ITSELF must depend upon his Majesties (the Army, General, and their Councils) pleasure.

4. That as the King hath a property in his Townes, Forts, and Kingdoms; so he (the Army and their General Council) may dispose of them as he pleaseth; and the Representative body of the whole Kingdom may not intermeddle in discharge of his Majesties (the Armies, Generals, Councils) trust, though by the advice of evil Councillors they see it diverted to the hazard of the publique peace & safety of the Kingdom.

5. That

\* Which now

they do.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

5. That his Majesty (the Army, General, and their Council) or any other person, may upon suggestions and pre-  
tences of Treason, Felony, or breach of peace (or of their Trusts, a fourth \* Army ~~new-minuted cause~~) Take the Members of Parliament, without giving satisfaction to the House, whereof they are Members, of the grounds of such suggestion or accusation, and without and against their consent (as in the case of the late secured, secluded Members, and their two ~~Junct.~~'s since) so they may \* Dil-  
member a Parliament, when they please, and make it what they will, when they will.

6. That whosoever shall follow the King (Army, General and their Council,) in the wars (against the Parliament) though it were to destroy Laws, Liberty, Religion, the Parliament it self, and the whole Kingdom; yet he shall be free from all crime or punishment. And that on the other side, to oppose by force any such force, though in the most Legal way, and by authority of the Representative body of the whole Kingdom, is to leavy war against the King (Army, General) and *TREASON* (within the Letter of 25 E. 3. or of their new Knacks since;) So our Lands, Liberties, Lives, Religion, and Laws themselves, *Whereby all the Rights both of King and People are due to them, and preserved for them, shall be at the sole will and pleasure of the Prince (Army, General, and General Council of Officers, in their new High Courts of In-justice, or other Martial Judicatories, as now they are.)*

O consider, consider seriously by these particulars, to what a sad, low, despicable condition all English Parliaments are now for ever reduced, and their pristine antient Priviledges, Honor, Freedom, Power, violently ravished from them by the late Army practises, violences, and rebellious insolencies against them, never to be parallel'd in any age; which hath really verified this clause in the Declaration of both Houses, \* August 4. 1642. objected against the King and his popish Army, in relation to the P. 496. Parliaments Army, purposely raised, commissioned, & engaged for their defence. That if the King (by his Army) \* may.

\* See their impeachments of the xi. Members, & the humble Answer of the Gen. Council & Officers of the Army, &c.

Jan. 3. 1648.

\* Have they not lately done so since this was pen-

ned, as well as hereto-fore?

Exact coll. I. \* *That the King (the \*Army, General, and their General Council of Officers) when he pleaseith, may declare the Major part of both Houses, (which in all sorts of Re-publick's dub, yea ought of right to oversway the Minority, & their Votes to be firm and binding to all men, as \* Aristotle & Jan. 3. 1648 himself resolves;) a faction of Malignant, Schismatical, and ambitious Persons: so that all Parliaments that have been heretofore and SHALL BE HERE AFTER, AND ALL LAWS MADE IN THEM may by this means*

"Quod pluribus viis pro-  
batumque fuerit, id in OM-  
NIBUS RE-  
BUS-PUB-  
LICIS VA-  
LET. In O-  
ligarchia enim 4. Rot. Parl. n. 22, 23, 36, 48, 66, 70. 113. 39 H. 6. c. 1. &c  
& Aristocratis,  
& Democritia,  
quod coram  
qui Rempubli-  
cam gerunt,  
MAJORI  
PARTIS  
PLACUE-  
RIT, i.e. RA-  
TUM AC-  
ALL LAWS MADE IN THEM. may of this means  
be called in question at pleasure; (yea nulled and repealed  
for ever, as some former Parliaments have been, when held  
and over-awed by armed power, or unduly elected, packed, sum-  
moned without Lawfull Authority, or some of the Mem-  
bers forcibly secluded, as you may read at large in the Sta-  
tutes of 21 R. 2. c. 11, 12, 16, 17, 18. 1 H. 4. c. 3. 1 H.  
17 E. 4. c. 7; worthy the serious perusal of our present  
Grandees, and all illegitimate Parliaments, where they  
may read the fatal end of all new unparliamentary projects,  
laws, devices, wherein many now so much glory, as if they  
would continue firm for ever: when as in a few years  
space, they will all probably prove nullities, be for e-  
ver reversed; yea, branded to posterity, as most pernicious  
presidents.

2. That his Majesty (*the Army and their General Council*) may declare what is the known Law of the Land, against the judgement of the Highest Court, and consequently of all his Courts: So that the safety and right of King and people, and **THE LAW IT SELF** must depend upon his Majesties (*the Army, General, and their Councils*) pleasure.

4. That as the King hath a property in his Townes, Forts, and Kingdoms; so he (the Army and their General Council) may dispose of them as he pleaseth; and the Representative body of the whole Kingdom may not intermeddle in discharge of his Maj:ties (the Armies, Generals, Councils) trust, though by the advice of evil Councillers they see it diverted to the hazard of the publique peace & safety of the Kingdom.

\* Which  
they do.

5. That his Majesty (the Army, General, and their Council) or any other person, may upon suggestions and pretences of Treason, Felony, or breach of peace (or of their Trusts, a fourth \* Army new-mined cause) Take the Members of Parliament, without giving satisfaction to the House, whereof they are Members, of the grounds of such suggestion or accusation, and without and against their consent (as in the case of the late secured, secluded Members, and their two Junct's since) so they may \* Dil- member a Parliament, when they please, and make it what they will, when they will.

\* See their impeachments of the xi. Members, & the humble Answer of the Gen. Council & Officers of the Army, &c. Jan. 3. 1648.

\* Have they not lately done so since this was pen-

6. That whosoever shall follow the King (Army, General and their Council,) in the wars (against the Parliament) though it were to destroy Laws, Liberty, Religion, the Parliament it self, and the whole Kingdom; yet he shall be free from all crime or punishment. And that on the other side, to oppose by force any such force, though in the most Legal way, and by authority of the Representative body of the whole Kingdom, is to leavy war against the King (Army, General) and *TREASON* (within the Letter of 25 E. 3. or of their new Knacks since;) So our Lands, Liberties, Lives, Religion, and Laws themselves, Whereby all the Rights both of King and People are due to them, and preserved for them, shall be at the sole will and pleasure of the Prince (Army, General, and General Council of Officers, in their new High Courts of Injustice, or other Martial Judicatories, as now they are.)

O consider, consider seriously by these particulars, to what a sad, low, despicable condition all English Parliaments are now for ever reduced, and their pristine antient Priviledges, Honor, Freedom, Power, violently ravished from them by the late Army practises, violences, and rebellious insolencies against them, never to be parallel'd in any age; which hath really verified this clause in the Declaration of both Houses, \* August 4. 1642. objected a-  
gainst the King and his popish Army, in relation to the P. 496. Parliaments Army, purposely raised, commissioned, & engaged for their defence. That if the King (by his Army)

may.

\* And are they not so lost now?

may force this Parliament ( as the Parliaments Army both forced and dissolved it ) *they may bid farewell to all Parliaments, for ever receiving good by them*; And if Parliaments be lost, they ( the People ) are lost, their Laws are lost, as well those lately made, as in former times, *ALL WHICH WILL BE CUT IN SVNDER WITH THE SAME SWORD, NOW DRAWN FURTHE DESTRUCTION OF THS PARLIAMENT*: ( as we now find true by sad experience.)

\* *Epistola ad solitariam Vi-*  
*tem agentem.*  
*Sir Christopher Sybthorpe his*  
*Reply to an*  
*Answer made*  
*by a Popish*  
*Adversary,*  
*Dublin 1615.*  
p. 27, 28, 29.

*Athanafius, Bishop of Alexandria* ( about the year of our Lord 340.) objected this as a great crime, barbarism, cruelty, and violation of the priviledges of Councils, to the *Arrian Emperour Constantius*. *That whensoever he called a Council or Assembly of Bishops, it was but for a shew: For he would not permit them to be guided by the Ecclesiastical Canons, but his Will alone must be their only Canon.* And when they advised him, not to subvert the Ecclesiastical order, nor bring the *Arrian Heresie* into the Church of God, he would neither bear, nor permit them to speak freely; but grievously bending his brows ( if they had spoken crois to his designs ) and *SHAKING HIS SWORD AT THEM, COMMANDED THEM TO BE TAKEN AWAY.* Whereupon he thus infers, *What Liberty for persuasion, or place for advice is there left, when he that contradicteth, shall for his labour lose either his Life, or his Country?* Why hath the Emperour gathered so great a number of Bishops, partly terrified with threats, partly enticed with promises, to condescend, that they will not communicate with *Athanafius?* And *Hilary Bishop of Poitou* Ann. 360. in his first Book against this Tyrannical *Arrian Emperour Constantius*, thus censures his violent proceedings of this kind, to the subversion of the freedom and priviledge of Councils and their members. *Thou gatherest COUNCILS, and when they be shut up together in one City, thou TERRIFIEST THEM WITH THREATS, THOU PINEST THEM WITH HUNGER, THOU LAMEST THEM WITH COLD,* ( as the Army Officers did the secluded

secluded Members 6 and 7 Decemb. 1648. when they shut them up all night in Hell, on the bare boards without beds in the cold, and kept them fasting all the next day at Whitehall, til 7 a clock at night.) *Thou depravest them with Dissembling;* O THOU WICKED ONE, what a mockery dost thou make of the Church and Councils? Only Doggs return to their vomits; and thou compellest the Priests of Christ, to sup up those things which they have disgorged, and commandest them in their confessions, to allow that WHICH BEFORE THEY CONDEMNED. What Bishops hand hast thou left innocent? What tongue hast thou not forced to falsehood? Whose heart hast thou not brought to the condemning of his former opinion? Thou hast subjected all to thy will, yea, to thy violence. And have not some swaying Army Officers, by their frowns, menaces, frauds, Swords, open force upon the Parliament and its Members, beyond all the presidents in any ages, done the like, and exceeded this Arrant Tyrant herein? And is it not then high time for all friends to Parliaments, to protest and provide against such detestable, treasonable violences for the future, destructive to all Parliaments, if permitted, or silently pretermitted without question, exemplary censure, righting of the imprisoned Members, or any provision to redresse them for the future?

Our prudent Ancestors were so carefull to prevent all violence, force, arms, and armed men, in or near any places where Parliaments were held, to terrifie, overawe, or disturb their proceedings or Members; \* That in the Parliament of 7 E. 1. (as you may read in *Ratfals Abridgement*, Armour, 1. Provision was made by the King, by common consent of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, by a general att. That in all Parliaments, Treaties, and other Assemblies, \*which should be made in the Realm of England FOR EVER, every man shall come without Force, and without Armour, well and peaceably to the honour of the King, and of the peace of him, and of his Realm, and they together with the Commonalty of the Realm upon solemn advise, declared; That it belonged to the King, and his part it is by his Royal

\* See the Declaration of the Lords and Commons, June 6. 1642. concerning this Statute.

Signiorly strictly to defend Wearing of Armour, and all other Force, against his peace at all times, when it shall please him (especially at such times, and in places where such Parliaments, Treaties, and Assemblies are held) and to punish them which shall doe contrary according to the Laws and usage of the Realm. And hereunto they are bound to aid the King, as their Sovereign Lord, at all sealons when need shall be. Hereupon our Kings ever since this statute, by virtue thereof, and by the Law and Custom of the PARLIAMENT, (as Sir Edward Cook in his 4 Institutes c. 1. p. 14. informs us) did at the beginning of every Parliament, make a special Proclamation, Prohibiting the bearing of Arms or weapons, in or near the places, where the Parliament sat, under pain of forfeiting all they had; Of which there are sundry presidents cited by Sir Edward Cook in his Margin; whereof I shall transcribe but one (which he omits) and that is 6 E. 3. Rot. Parliament n. 2. 3. ' Because that before these days, at the Parliaments and Counsels of our Lord the King, Debates, Riots and commotions have risen and been moved, for that People have come to the places where Parliaments have been summoned and assembled, armed with privy coats of plate, spears, swords, long knyves, (or daggers) and other sort of arms, by which the businesses of our Lord the King and his Realm have been impeached, and the great men which have come thither by his command, have been affrighted: Our Lord the King, willing to provide remedy against such mischiefs, defendeth, that no man of what estate or condition soever he be, upon pain of forfeiting all that he may forfeit, to the King, shall be seen armed with a Coat of Mail, nor yet of plate, nor with an Halberd, nor with a spear, nor sword, nor long knife, nor any other suspicious arms, within the City of LONDON, nor within the Suburbs thereof; nor any place near the said City, nor yet within the Palace of WEST MINSTER, or any place near the said Palace, by Land or Water, under the foresaid pain: except only such of the Kings men

\* Is not the quartering of Horse and Foot in or near such places, to affright and overawe Parliaments and their Members, a Violation of this Law, Proclamation, Law and Custom of all English Parliaments, fit to be redressed.

men as he shall depute, or by his command shall be deputed to keep the peace within the said places: and alio except the Kings servants, according to the Statute of *Northampton*. And it is not the intention of our Lord the King, that any Earl, or Baron may not have his Lince brought to him in any place, but onely in the Kings presence, and in the place of Councell. The like Proclamations were made in the beginning of the Parliaments of 9, 13, 17, 18, 19, 25 Edw. 3. and sundry others more necessary to be revived in all succeeding English Parliaments now, than ever heretofore, since the unpresidented forces upon the late Members of both Houses, and the Parliament it self, by the Army-Officers and Souldiers, raised to defend them from Vjolence: The Treasonableness and Transcendency whereof being at large related in my Epistle to the Reader, before my Speech in Parliament 4 December 1648, I shall not here criminally presse, nor insist on, but referre them thereunto: However for the future security and free-  
dom of our Parliaments from violence, I must crave liberty to inform these *Army Parliament, driverty, forcers, dissolvers*, ( habituated to this trade ) That if the <sup>Exact coll.</sup> *late* <sup>P. 34, 56, 66,</sup> Kings march to the *House of Commons*, accompanied only <sup>67, 68, 76, 77,</sup> with some of his *Pensioners and others*, <sup>198, 200, 201,</sup> armed with *Pistols and Swords*, <sup>202, 246, 695,</sup> meerly to demand but five Members thereof to be delivered up to *Justice*, particularly impeached by him of *High Treason* some dayes before: to wit, <sup>723, 729.</sup> *That they had traierously endeavoured to subvert the Fundamental Laws and Government of this Kingdome: To deprive the King of his Royal power: To place over the Subjects an Arbitrary and Tyrannical power, To subvert the very Rights and being of Parliaments: and by force and terror to compell the Parliament to joyn with them in their designts; for which end they had actually raised and countenanced *Tumults* against the King and Parliament.*

Or if the <sup>\*</sup> Kings bare tampering with some Officers of his own Northern Army, to draw a Petition from them to the Houses, or march towards London from

<sup>\*</sup> Let those observe this Impeachment, who are now really guilty of it in the highest degree.

<sup>\*</sup> Exact Coll. p. 118, 195, 207. 10 237. 248, 273, 293. 523, 524, 525, 617, 631, 660, <sup>\*</sup> their 695.

their quarters; (not to seize upon, force or dissolve the Parliament or its Members, but only to over-aw them, and impeach the freedom of their debates, Votes touching Episcopacy, Church-Government, and the King's Revenues) were such high transcendent violations of the Priviledges and Freedome of Parliament, and unsufferable injuries, as both Houses of Parliament separately, and joynly proclaimed them to all the world, in severall Declarations, during his life; Or such capitall crimes, as those who condemned and executed him for a *Traytor and Tyrant*, have published in their Declaration of 17 March 1648, touching the grounds of their proceedings against him, and setting the Government in the way of a Free State, without King or House of Lords) since his beheading, in these very words. But ABOVE ALL, the English army was laboured by the King to be engaged against the English Parliament; a thing of that strange impiety and unnaturalnes for the King of England, that nothing can answer it, but his being a Forraigner; neither could it have easily purchased belief, but by his succeeding visible actions in full pursuance of the same; as the Kings coming in Person to the House of Commons, to seize the five Members, whither he was followed with some hundreds of unworthy debauched persons, armed with swords, and pistols, and other arms; and they attending him at the door of the House, ready to execute what the Leader should command them. Which they charged against the King, as the highest of his unparalleled Offences; for which they appeal to all the world of indifferent men to judge, whether they had not sufficient cause to bring him to justice? Though neither he nor his followers then seized, secured, secluded, injured any one Member, when they thus went to the Commons House; Yet presently retralld his Impeachment, and offered all satisfaction that should be desired by the House for this breach of Privilegio; and though neither the Northern Army, nor their Officers ever advanced towards, or offered the least violence to the Houses, or their priviledges, by Petition or otherwise.

\* Exact Coll.  
p. 51, 52, 54.  
66, 67, and  
elsewhere.

Then

Then certainly the Parliaments own Armies Officers, Counsels, manifold high printed *Declarations*, of June 14. 23. July 7. Aug. 18. 1647. Nov. 16. & Decemb 7. 1648. and others before and since, their professed open Oppositions, Impeachments, against the very Proceedings, Votes, Orders, Ordinances, Members of both Houses of Parliament, which first raised them principally for their defence; [Printed by their order in their *Book of Declarations*, *The History of Independency*, and my *Speech in Parliament*,] their Impeachment of eleven Members of the House of Commons, and sundry Lords at once; their securing of above 40, and secluding of above five parts of six of the whole House of Commons at once; their avowed marches with the whole Body of the Army, in *Bastalia*, severall times to force the Houses, seise their Members, over-aw, affright, dis-member, dissolve the Parliament it self, and their own new erected Junctoies since, and justification of it to all the world in print [in their humble *Answer touching the secured and secluded Members*, Jan. 3. 1648. *The true state of the case of the Commonwealth of England*, 1654. and their *Declarations concerning their dissolution of their two Junctoies*.] after these Misdemeanours of the King, without the least re-pentance for them, must needs be farre more execrable, unwarrantable and criminal, than the Kings, and deserve a severer censure than his Peccadilloes in respect of their crimes. And if by the \* whole Armies printed *Remonstrances*, August 2. and 18. 1647. the tumult of some unarmed *London Apprentices*, who offered some small force to the Houser, to the violation of their Priviledges, (without securing or secluding any one Member) deserved a speedy and exemplary capital proceeding against the principal contrivers and Actors in it; as they then declared, and vehemently urged again and again in those *Remonstrances* ) Or if by their own Charge in the Name of the whole Army, June 14. 1647. against the XI. Members, it was so high an offence in them, That they jointly or severally invited, encouraged, abetted or countenanced several

\* See their Declaration of June 23. 1647. & Aug. 18. Dec. 6. 1648

\* And their Generals Letter from Bedford, 29 July 1647.

\* See a Declaration of the Gen. Council & Armies Engagements, &c. p. 49.

their quarters; (not to seize upon, force or dissolve the Parliament or its Members, but only to over-aw them, and impeach the freedom of their debates, Votes touching Episcopacy, Church-Government, and the Kings Revenues) were such high transcendent violations of the Priviledges and Freedome of Parliament, and unsufferable injuries, as both Houses of Parliament separately, and joyntly proclaimed them to all the world, in severall Declarations, during his life; Or such capitall crimes, as those who condemned and executed him for a *Traytor and Tyrant*, have published in their Declaration of 17 March 1648, touching the grounds of their proceedings against him, and setting the Government in the way of a Free State, without King or House of Lords) since his beheading, in these very words. But ABOVE ALL, the English army was laboured by the King to be engaged against the English Parliament; a thing of that strange impiety and unnaturalnes for the King of England, that nothing can answer it, but his being a Forraigner; neither could it have easily purchased belief, but by his succeeding visible actions in full pursuance of the same; as the Kings coming in Person to the House of Commons, to seize the five Members, whither he was followed with some hundreds of unworthy debauched persons, armed with swords, and pistols, and other arms; and they attending him at the door of the House, ready to execute what the Leader should command them. Which they charged against the King, as the highest of his unparalleled Offences; for which they appeal to all the world of indifferent men to judge, whether they had not sufficient cause to bring him to Justice? Though neither he nor his followers then seized, secured, secluded, injured any one Member, when they thus went to the Commons House; Yet presently retralled his Impeachment, and offered all satisfaction that should be desired by the House for this breach of Privilege: and though neither the Northern Army, nor their Officers ever advanced towards, or offered the least violence to the Houses, or their priviledges, by Petition or otherwise.

Then

\* Exact Coll.  
in the pages  
quoted before.

\* Exact Coll.  
p. 51, 52, 54.  
66, 67, and  
elsewhere.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

Then certainly the Parliaments own Armies Officers, Counsels, manifold high printed *Declarations*, of June 14. 23. July 7. Aug. 18. 1647. Nov. 16. & Decemb. 7. 1648. and others before and since, their professed open Oppositions, Impeachments, against the very Proceedings, Votes, Orders, Ordinances, Members of both Houses of Parliament, which first raised them principally for their defence; [Printed by their order in their Book of Declarations, *The History of Independency*, and my Speech in Parliament,] their Impeachment of eleven Members of the House of Commons, and sundry Lords at once; their securing of above 40, and secluding of above five parts of six of the whole House of Commons at once; their avowed marches with the whole Body of the Army, in Battalia, severall times to force the Houses, seise their Members, over-aw, affright, dis-member, dissolve the Parliament it self, and their own new erected Junctoes since, and justification of it to all the world in print [in their humble Answer touching the secured and secluded Members, Jan. 3. 1648. *The true state of the case of the Commonwealth of England, 1654. and their Declarations concerning their dissolution of their two Junctoes*] after these Misdemeanours of the King, without the least re-pentance for them, must needs be farre more execrable, unwarrantable and criminal, than the Kings, and deserve a severer censure than his Peccadilios in respect of their crimes. And if by the whole Armies printed *Remonstrances*, August 2. and 18. 1647. the tumult of some unarmed London Apprentices, who offered some small force to the Houses, to the violation of their Priviledges, (without securing or secluding any one Member) deserved a speedy and exemplary capital proceeding against the principal contrivers and Actors in it, as they then declared, and vehemently urged again and again in those *Remonstrances*) Or if by their own Charge in the Name of the whole Army, June 14. 1647. against the XI. Members, it was so high an offence in them, That they joyned or severally invited, encouraged, abetted or countenanced several

\* See their Declaration of June 23. 1647. & Aug. 18. Dec. 6. 1648

\* And their Generals Letter from Ebdorf, 29 July 1647.

\* See a Declaration of the Gen. Council & Armies Entagagements, &c. p. 49.

Rec.

Reformadest, and OTHER OFFICERS AND SOLDIERS TUMULTUOUSLY AND VIOLENTLY TO GATHER TOGETHER AT WESTMINSTER, TO AFFRIGHT & ASSAULT THE MEMBERS OF PARLIAMENT IN PASSAGES TO & FROM THE HOUSE, TO OFFER VIOLENCE TO THE HOUSE ITSELF, & BY SVCH VNRVLY OVERTURES & THREATS TO AWE AND INFORCE THE PARLIAMENT ; And that upon their bare suggestion thereof ( without any proof at all, or colour of truth ) they presently demanded, That the persons impeached MIGHT BE FORTHWITH EXCLUDED FROM SITTING IN THE HOUSE, and removed thence, before any hearing or trial, which the Officers and Army eagerly pressed in their Paper of *June 15.* 1647. Nay, if by their own late printed 'Instrument of the Government of the Commonwealth of *England*, &c. 'Articles 14. 16. 'All and every person and persons, who 'have aided, advised, assisted, or abetted in any war against 'the Parliament since the first day of *January*, 1641. (un- 'lesse they have since been in the Service of the Parlia- 'ment, and given signal testimony of their good affections 'thereunto) shall be disabled, and be incapable to be e- 'lected, or to give any Vote in the Election of any Mem- 'ber to serve in the next, or in the three succeeding trien- 'nial Parliaments : and all Votes and Elections given to 'the contray, shall be null and void. And if any person so 'made incapable, shall forfeit one full years value of his 'real estate, and one full third part of his personal estate, 'in case he shall give his Vote for election of Members 'to serve in Parliament : as they there adjudge ; though such persons as they intend thus to disable, never waged any actual war against the Parliament it self, or its Mem- bers, immediatly, but only against the Forces raised by the Parliament, and so mediately and indirectly only against the Parliament, ( the case of all the late Kings adherents and assistants, not within the letter, but meaning of these Articles : ) then doubtless those Army-Officers, Soldiers, and

and all Zealous Protestant Friends of England.

and their *Confederats*, who advised, aided, assisted abetted in one or more wars against the Parliament Houses, and Parliament Members themselves, whom they immediately assaulted, forced, secured, secluded, dissipated, dissolved, destroyed, and have justified it several times in print, 'without giving any signal testimony of their good affections to the Parliament'; and in this their *Instrument* have laid \* <sup>Article 10,</sup> *Chasms, clogs, restraints, on all new future Parliaments,* <sup>12, 21, 22, 24,</sup> *of their own framing, inconsistent with the Honour, Freedom,* <sup>27, 30, 32, 36,</sup> *Priviledges, being of real English Parliaments; deserve a* <sup>37, 38, 39.</sup> *farre higher and leverer censure than these Apprentices, or impeached Members did in their repute; or those Members they most insolently accuse and impeach, in their Declarations of June 23. and August 18. 1647. (not to be presidended in any age since the Creation, till then:)* and they all are by their own Verdict, *Instrument*, totally disabled (as much as the archeft Malignants and Cavaliers) by the very letter of these Articles, to be elected, or give any vote for the election of Members in the four next succeeding Parliaments; and those who have given their Votes in the late Elections, have thereby 'forfeited at least one full 'years value of their real, and one full third part of their personal estates; and deserve as high, (if not an higher) censure, as any sequestred, or other Delinquents condemned formerly by them, for bearing arms, levying or abetting any war, but only mediately against the Parliament; and as high an uncapacity to be put not only on themselves, but their Heir males to serve in Parliament, as the Statute of 21 R. 2. c. 6. imposed heretofore on others, for a farre leſſe offence; to secure the Members and Priviledges of all succeeding Parliaments, from such unpresidended forcible violences, ruptures, dismembers, dissolutions, as the last Parliament sustained, by the Armies outrage and. <sup>See Exact Collect. p. 320</sup> *confederacy against them, (of most dangerous president to posterity;)* of which I desire to make them truly sensible. <sup>321, 322, 561,</sup> <sup>the true and excellent constitution of our Parliament,</sup>

The last real and \* duly constituted *English Parliament* we had, were so deeply sensible, of the dangerous deſtructive

To the truly Christian-Reader,

Give Consequences of securing or secluding their Members, and keeping them from the Houses, upon any Impeachments or Surmises, without the Notice and consent of the House ;

\* Exact Col<sup>l</sup>.  
p.723, 724.  
726, 727.

THAT IN THEIR FOREMENTIONED *Remonstrance of Nov. 2. 1642.* they claimed and asserted this, TO BE SO CLEAR AND ESSENTIAL A PRIVILEGE OF PARLIAMENT, THAT THE WHOLE FREEDOM THEREOF DEPENDETH UPON IT. That NO MEMBER OF EITHER HOUSE OF PARLIAMENT was to be proceeded against, or judged, NOR TAKEN AWAY, OR DETAINED FROM THE SERVICE OF THE HOUSE, WHEREOF HE IS A MEMBER ; (no, not in case of *Treason, Felony, or Breach of Peace, much less in any other*) until such time as that House hath satisfaction concerning the cause : though in such cases they confessed, he might be arresteded by the Officers of Parliament, or any other Ministers of Justice, to the intent only, That he might be brought to the Parliament *Corpus cum causa*, and detained in safe custody till he may be brought to the Parliament ; but not to be proceeded against in any inferior Court, before such time as the cause be heard in Parliament, and dismissed from it. For (else) who sees not, that by this means, UNDER FALSE PRETENCES OF CRIMES AND ACCUSATIONS, SUCH AND SO MANY MEMBERS OF BOTH OR EITHER HOUSE OF PARLIAMENT MAY BE TAKEN OVT OF IT AT ANY TIME, BY ANY PERSONS TO SERVE A TVRN, AND TO MAKE A MAJOR PART OF WHOM THEY WILL AT PLEASVRE. And as the grand Inquist of the whole Kingdom shoule be (by this means) subject to the grand Inquist of one particular County ; So the whole Representative Body of the Kingdom shoule be at the Devotion of a Middlesex Jury, (as since of their own Army, raised to protect them from these mischiefs.) And therefore, at THE FREEDOM OF PARLIAMENTS DEPENDETH IN A GREAT PART UPON THEIR PRIVILEGES, AND THE FREEDOM OF THIS NATION UPON THE FREEDOM OF PARLIAMENTS, WE HAVE GOOD REASON TO BE.

Nota.

Nota.

and all Zealous Protectors & Freemen of England.

BELEIVE, that the People of England knowing their Lives and Fortunes are bound up in this bundle, will venture their Lives and Fortunes in this Quarrel: Which I intreat all those who have so highly infringed this principle Privilege of Parliament of late years, with all the people of England, now seriously to consider, to vindicate, preserve it in all succeeding ages from the like violations, if ever they expect to be Freemen, or to enjoy free English Parliaments again; which are such an ESSENTIAL PART \* Exact Coll. OF THE CONSTITUTION OF THE KINGDOM, that p. 561.  
we can attain TO NO HAPPINESSE WITHOUT THEM, and like Hipocrates twins, We must laugh and cry, LIVE AND DIE TOGETHER WITH THEM.

Now farther to convince the Army-Officers, Soldiers, of their late great injustice to, and affronts, contempts against the Parliament which raised them, in relation to our ancient fundamental Government and chief Member of the Parliament; I shall desire them and all their confederates in cold blood, seriously to consider, whether they have not, by their undutifull, violent proceedings against them, contrary to the Votes, Declarations, Remonstrances of the PARLIAMENT, endeavoured (as much as in them is) to falsifie this clause in both Houies Declaration Nov. 3. 1643 \* Although they would persuade \* Exact Coll. his Majesty, That there is little confidence to be placed in p. 596. our Modesty and Duty; yet, AS GOD IS WITNESSE OF OUR THOUGHTS, SO SHALL OUR ACTIONS WITNESSE TO ALL THE WORLD; that TO THE \* How much it and they have been dishonoured by the contrary, let the Army Officers read at leasure in Militie his Victory of Truth.

WHO ARE MOST ZEALOUS IN IT (' so much struck-en at by the contrivers of that Declaration, under odious names ) we shall suffer more for and from our Sovereign, than we hope God will ever permit the malice of evil Counsellors to put us to; And although the happiness of this and all Kingdome dependeth chiefly upon God; Yet WE ACKNOWLEDGE THAT IT DOTH SO MAINLY DEPEND UPON HIS MAJESTY, and THE ROYALL BRANCHES OF THAT

Nota.

Notes.

'ROOT, that as WE HAVE HERETOFORE, SO  
'WE SHALL HEREAFTER esteem no hazard too great,  
'no reproach too vile; but that we shall willingly goe  
'through the one, and undergoe the other, That we, and  
'the WHOLE KINGDOME MAY ENJOY THAT  
'HAPPINESSE, which we cannot in an ordinary way of  
'providence expect FROM ANY OTHER FOUNTAIN  
'OR STREAM, than those from whence ( were the poi-  
son of evil Councils once removed from about them ) no  
'doubt, but we and THE WHOLE KINGDOME  
'SHOULD BE SATISFIED MOST ABUNDANTLY.  
And on the contrary, have they not fully and actually ver-  
ified, in respect of themselves and their Confederates  
in the Houses, this *Odious aspersion*, then ( only in predi-  
ction ) cast by the KING on the PARLIAMENT, but by  
them at that time renounced with greatest detestation;  
and drawn those sad consequences on the whole Kingdom,  
wherewith both HOUSES conclude that, *Declaration* in  
these words?

\* *Ecclesi. Coll. 7: \* Thus the Representative Body of the whole King-  
dom ( since dissolved by the Army ) is a Faction of  
Malignant, Schismatical, ambitious Persons, whose DE-  
SIGN IS AND ALWAYES HATH BEEN TO AL-  
TER THE WHOLE FRAME OF GOVERNMENT,  
BOTH OF CHURCH AND STATE, AND TO SUB-  
JECT BOTH KING AND PEOPLE TO THEIR OWN  
LAWLESSE ARBITRARY POWER AND GOVERN-  
MENT, and that they DESIGN THE RUINE OF HIS  
MAJESTIES PERSON and OF MONARCHY IT SELF:  
and consequently that they are TRAITORS and all the King-  
dom with them, ( for their act is the act of the whole King-  
dom ) And whether their punishment and ruine may not also  
INVOLVE THE WHOLE KINGDOME IN CONCLU-  
SION, AND REDUCE IT INTO THE CONDITION  
OF A CONQUERED NATION ( as some ARMY OFFI-  
CERS, & SOLDIERS openly averre we are now redu-  
ced to by and under them ) NO MAN CAN TELL: BUT  
EXPERIENCE SHEWETH US ( and now we find it  
most*

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England,

most true in the \* ARMY-OFFICERS, COVNCCELL,  
SOVLDIERS) THAT SVCCESSE OFTEN DRAWS  
MEN NOT ONLY BEYOND THEIR PROFES-  
SION; but also many times beyond their first imensi-  
ons.

\*Who in their  
Letters of July  
18.1647. Pro-  
positions of  
Aug.2, and o-  
ther of their  
Declarations,

professed to all the world, That it was fully agreeable to all their Principles, & should be their desires and endeavours to maintain Monarchy, the Priviledges and Freedom of the Parliament; and the Rights of his Majesty and Royal Family, that so a lasting Peace and Agreement might be settled in this Nation, &c. which otherwise, they confessed then in good earnest, could not be hoped for, nor expected. Whence they intituled their Printed Book, *A Declaration of the Engagements, Remonstrances, Representations, Pro-  
posals, Desires, and Resolutions from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and THE  
GENERAL COUNCIL OF THE ARMY, FOR SETLING OF HIS  
MAJESTY IN HIS JUST RIGHTS, THE PARLIAMENT IN THEIR  
JUST PRIVILEGES, and THE SUBJECTS IN THEIR LIBERTIES  
AND FREEDOMES*: Printed by their and the Lords House special Order  
London 1647. Let them now seriously consider and perform it in good earnest.

Surely as the Armies and their Confederates late proceedings in relation to themselves, (though not unto the forced, dismembered, dissolved Parliament, and seceded Members) have fully verified this charge in every particular, then reputed, *most false and scandalous*; which I thus press upon their consciences at this time, and so largely insist on, not to defame or asperse them to the world, as many others do, who apply that *black Character* of Iter. 9. 2. to 6. c. 12. 6. Rev. 3. 10. to 19. (They are all an ASSEMBLY OF TREACHEROUS MEN) *Thine habitation is in the MIDST OF DECEIT, &c. Destruction and Misery are in their wayes, and the way of Peace they have not known; there is no fear of God before their eyes*) unto them in a more eminent manner, as being really verified by their unparalleled exorbitances formentioned; but to vindicate the *Innocency, Integrity of the Majority and secluded Members of both Houses, against the scandalous printed aspersions of Mill-  
tierie and other Papists, to preserve and justify the Honour of our Reformed Religion, and of the most zealous Professors thereof; to restore, re-establish if possible, the Priviledges, the Freedoms of all Future Parliaments, much impaired, endangered by their heady violent Proce-  
dings, and most pernicious Presidents to Posterity ( if not*

publicly abominated, exploded by them, or exemplarily punished (to deter all others from their future imitation) to convince them by what *Jesuitical, Popish, old Court-Principles, Counsels, Practices*, they have hitherto been misguided; and to reclaim them, as much as in me lieth, for the future, from the like *destructive Practices*, for the publick Safety, Peace, Settlement of our distracted Kingdoms; and do most earnestly beseech them, as they are *English-men, Soldiers, Christians*, seriously to repent of and lay to heart, lest they perish eternally, for them at last; as likewise to take heed, lest by teaching and instigating the *Common Soldiers of the Army*, to suppress, oppresse, betray the Parliament, Kingdom, People, who raised, payed, and entrusted them *only for their safeguard and defence*, they do not thereby instruct and encourage them at last to betray and destroy themselves; it being a true observation of <sup>\*</sup>*Seneca the Philosopher*, *Aliquando Tyrannorum prædicti in ipsis consurrexerunt. PERFIDIAMQVE ET IMPIETATEM ET FERITAREM, ET QVICQVID AB ILLIS DIDICERANT. IN IPSOS EXECRERVNT: Quid enim potest ab eo quisquam sperare, QVEM MALVM ESSE DOCVIT? Non diu patet, nequitia, nec quantum jubetur, peccat; as we have seen by many late presidents: So the Army-Officers, Souldiers Great Successes in all their Wars, Designs, and forcible ill Proceedings against the King, Parliament, Kingdom, Government, Laws and Liberties; as it hath caused them not only beyond their Professions, but also beyond their first Intentions, Commissions, Protestations, to forget that Gospel-precept given to Souldiers, *Luke 3. 14.* to advance themselves to a more absolute Sovereign arbitrary Power over them, than ever any Kings of England claimed or pretended to, (as their late Proceedings, Remonstrances, and transcendent Instruments of the Government of the three Kingdoms, manifest; )*

<sup>(f)</sup> *Psal. 37. 7* *so it hath been the (f) principal Ground, whereby they have Ecccl. 8. 11, justified all their unprincipled forementioned Exorbitancies, as lawfull, commendable, Christian: and that which hath struck such a stupifying pannick fear, such a stupendous cowardize,*

<sup>\*</sup> *De Clement.*  
1.1. c. 26.

and all Zerulous Protestant Freemen of England.

cowardize, baseness, sottishness, into the Generality of the Nobility, Gentry, Ministry, and Commons of our late most heroick English Nation, that there is scarce (t) a man (t) Epiph. 22. to be found throughout the Realms of any Eminency (though 30. we should seek after him like Diogenes, with a Candle) that dares freely open his mouth against their most irregular, illegal, violent, destructive arbitrary Proceedings, Usurpations, Innovations, Oppressions, Taxes, Projects, to the shaking and utter subverting of our ancient Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Rights, Properties, Parliaments, Parliamentary Privileges, Government, and taking away of the very Lives of some ( and thereby endangering the Lives of all other ) English Freemen of all Degrees, in mischristened High Courts of Justice. Such a strange Charm is there in Success alone, to metamorphise Men into meer (v) tempo- (v) See 2 King. rising, slavish, sordid sots and beasts ; yea, to cause not only 10. 1, to 12. persons truly honourable, but the very (x) Devil himself, Eth. 8. 17. and the worst of beasts, to be wondred after, applauded, a- (x) Deut. 32. 17. 1 Cor. 10. dored, not only as Saints, but Gods. We read Rev. 13. 10. Rev. 9. 20. of a Monstrous deformed BEAST, to whom the Dragon Ephes. 2. 2. (the Devil) gave his Power, Seat and Great Authority; where- upon, all the world wondred after the Beast, and worshipped not only the Dragon that gave him power, but the Beast like- wise ; saying, Who is like unto the Beast ? WHO IS ABLE TO MAKE WAR WITH HIM ? And there was given unto him a Mouth speaking Great things, and blasphemies, and power was given him to continue and make war forty and two months. And power was given unto him to make war with the SAINTS, AND TO OVERCOME THEM ; and power was given him over all Kindreds, and Tongues, and Nations. And ( HEREVON IT FOLLOWS ) all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Lambs Book of Life. And another Beast (under him) caused the earth, and all that dwelt therein to set up the Image of this Beast, and to worship it ; and he caused all both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive the mark of the Beast in their right hand, and in their foreheads ; and none might buy or sell, but he that had this mark ; and

and as many as would not worship this Beast's Image, were ordered to be killed. Yet this Blasphemous Beast's reign and power continued but forty two Months, Rev. 13. 5. This Beast, (in the height of his Power and Victories) was by God himself, threatened to go into captivity, and he killed with the Sword, as he had led others into captivity, and killed them with the Sword, ver. 10. All his followers and worshippers shall (soon after) drink of the wine of God's wrath, and be tormented with fire and brimstone, &c. Rev. 14. 9, 10, 11. The Saints at last shall get the victory over this Beast, Rev. 15. 2. And the Beast himself ( notwithstanding all his former Victories, Friends, and great Armies) was at last taken, and his false Prophet with him; and were both cast alive into a lake burning with fire and brimstone, and all his Forces were slain with the Sword, and the fowls were filled with their flesh, Rev. 19. 18 19, 20, 21. From which Texts I have frequently silenced, confounded some of our conquering Army-Officers and Soldiers, whilst prisoner under them, when they were vapouring of their Great Victories, Successes, and concluding from thence, both their Sainship, and the Goodness of their Actions; saying oft-times like the Beast's followers here, Who is able to make war with us? And that with these genuine deductions from these Texts, which they could not reply against; worthy all Soldiers and others saddest meditations.

1. That God may, nay oft-times doth give great power to the very worst and most blasphemous of all Men and Beasts; & that not only over one or two, but many Tongues, Nations, as in this Text, and Dan. 7. 3, to 29. c. 8. 4, 10 27.

2. That such Beasts many times may, and do not only make war with, but even overcome the very Saints themselves in battle, as the Babylonians, Assyrians, and other ungodly Beasts did the Israelites, God's own Saints and People, Psa. 79. 1, 2, &c. Dan. 7. 21, 23, 24, 25. Isa. 10. 5, &c. c. 14. 16, 17. Jer. 26. 6, 7, 8. c. 32, 9. &c. yet they were but blasphemous Beasts, and wretches still, not Saints.

3. That if such Beasts have but Great Power and Success in their Wars, Enterprizes against their Enemies, or the Saints them-

themselves; though their mouths utter blasphemy against the God of Heaven, his Name, Tabernacle, Saints; though their Actions, Designs be never so impious, atheistical, treasonable, detestable; their power but short and fading, yet whiles they are in Power and Prosperity, the whole world will wonder, run after, worship, flatter, *Saint*, *Deifie* and *Adore* them for Gods, (as (y) Alexander the Great, (y) Plutarch and Julius Caesar's friends, flatterers did them; and some wicked Popes Favourites them too; )yea, set up, and *worship* <sup>Avianus, Quintus Curtius, Suetonius,</sup> their very *Images*, receive their marks in their hands, foreheads, and extol them to the skies, saying, *Who is like unto the Beast? who is able to make war with him?* <sup>Grimston, in the life of Alexander, and Julius Caesar, Balbus, his Lives of the Popes. Mynes Mystery of Iniquity.</sup>

4. That such adulatory Speeches, Vaunts, Practises as these, and such Arguments of *Saintship*, of the *Goodness* of mens causes, undertakings, actions, only from their *present Power, Victories and Successes*, are the arguments, practises, of worldly, earthly, beaithly men; of worshippers of the *Beast* and *Dragon* of (x) Assyrians, Turks, Popes, not of the *E-  
lect* real *Saints* of God, *Whose names are written in the Lambes Book of life*; who will neither flatter, worship, nor adore such *Beasts*, nor receive their marks in their hands or foreheads, though they be prohibited to buy or sell, or slain for refusing it by their Instruments, Rev. 13. 8, 15, 17. Dan. 3. 12. 19. 29.

5. That such *Beasts* in power, will never want under Beasts and Instruments, nor yet (a) false Prophets to per- (a) Rev. 13. 1. swade or enforce Obedience and Subjection to them, even to 18. c. 16, 13. by disfranchisements, death, lying wonders, flattering 14. c. 19, 20. Prophecies, Speeches, Sermons, and Hypocritical Mock- 1 King. 22. 6. falls, to 24.

6. That the Power and Dominion of such *Beasts*, is given and derived to them immediately by the *Dragon* (the (b) (b) Ephes. 2. 2. Prince of the power of the Air.) only by Gods permission, not his approbation; Rev. 13. 2. Hos. 8. 4. 3 Thess. 2. 4, 8, 9. And that in wrath, for the punishment of the Peoples sins, and destruction, greater condemnation of the beasts themselves are left. Hos. 13. 11. Rev. 13. and 14, and 19. Psal. 94, 23. Jer. 51. 24, &c. c. 5 throughout. Hab. 3. 6, 7, 8.

7. That this their Dominion, Reign and Triumph, is commonly very short, like this *Beasts* here for forty two Months, *Rev. 13. 5.* which is but three years and an

(c) *Parereculus*, half. (c) *Julius Caesar* that great first Conqueror of this *Island* and a great part of the *World*; usurping the supreme *Power over the Roman Senate, and changing the Government*, *lived only FIVE MONTHS A SOVERAIGN LORD IN PEACE* (though some compute his whole dominion 3 years and 7 months) and then was suddenly stabbed to death in the *Senate-House*, by those friends in whom he reposed greatest trust; for his *Tyrannical Usurpations, and alteration of their former Government*; for endeavouring (as was suspected) to make himself *KING OF THE ROMANS*, (though he rejected the Title of King when offered unto him by *M. Antonius*, saying, That *Jove was only King of the Romans*, that so he might seem to be compelled to receive it by the people, (being their King before in deed, though not in name:)

\* Do not some now by words and deeds, repute it and the People so and for saying, That the \* Commonwealth was but a Voice or Name, without a Body or Substance. *Nulum violentum est dominum*, See *Isa. 10. and 14. Job. 20. 4, 5, &c. Psal. 37 and 73. Psal. 92. 6, 7. Isa. 17, 13, 14. 2 Chron. 23. and Sir Walter Rawlins Preface to his History of the World, worthy serious perusal by the Grandees of these times.*

8. That in conclusion such *Conquering Usurping Beasts*, notwithstanding all their Power, Friends, Followers, Confederates, Armies, Policies, are usually conquered, taken, slain on Earth, and cast into the Lake burning with fire and brimstone for ever, for their *Tyrannies, Blasphemies, Bloodsheds, Oppressions of the People and Gods Saints, and their Confederates, Armies, false Prophets, followers, adorers* \* destroyed with them even on earth; and then made to drink the *Cup of Gods wrath, fury and torments for ever in hell*, *Isa. 10. and 14. Jer. 50. and 51. Rev. 19. 19. 20, 21. c. 6. 15, 16, 17.*

\* See *Mat. 27. 27. an. 655.*  
*1 Kings 16. 2.*  
*Kings 15. 2.*  
*Chron. 13. 17.*  
*18, 19, 20, and our King Richard the third.*

9. That though they continue Conquerors and victorious for many years; and conquer not only, one, two or three, but many Kings and Kingdoms; cut off not only the thumbs of their Kings, that they might not lift up a *Sword* against them, and their *great race*, that they may not run

run from them, but their Heads too; Yet God at last ( in his retaliating Justice ) doth usually pay them Home in their own coyne, as is evident, not onely by \* *Rajazet the Turkish Emperour*, our \* King Penda, ( who slew no less than 5. Christian Kings in several battles, took sundry other Kings prisoners, and at last was slain himself, with all his old victorious Captains and Soldiers, by King Oswi, and a small despicable Army of raw Souldiers; not half so many as they, who thereupon seized on his Kingdom) and others in prophane Stories; but by that memorable History of (d) *Adonibezek*; who after his Conquest of no less than <sup>(d) Judg. 1. 2.</sup> <sub>to 8.</sub> <sup>See the Turkish History in his life.</sup> <sup>See Huntingdon, Mat. west. Ann. 655. Grav. 655. Speed, History of Fabian Bampton, in the life of Penda.</sup> <sup>See the like of</sup> <sup>70 Kings, ( who ever in this latter age, conquered one quarter so many? ) and tyrannizing over their persons, was, by a small party of Judah and Simeon, fought with on his own dung-hill, his victorious old Army totally routed, ten thousand of them slain, himself forced to fly, pursued, and taken prisoner by these contemptible Enemies, who cut off his thumbs and his great toes. Whereupon Adoni-bezek ( though an idolatrous Canaanite ) used these memorable words, worthy all Conquerours and Tyrants memorial; recorded by God himself to all Posterity, *Judges 1. 7.* *Threescore and ten Kings having their thumbs, and their great toes cut off, have gathered their meat under my table* ( like so many Dogs rather than Kings ) *AS I HAVE DONE, SO GOD HATH REWARDED ME;* and they brought him ( Prisoner ) to Jerusalem, and there he died. See the like retaliation threatened, inflicted. *Hab. 2. 6.* *7. 8. Isa. 33. 3. Dan. 7. 23. to 27. Obad. 15. Ezech. 35. 5. 6. 15. Rev. 16. 5. 6. 10r. 51, and 52. Nah. 3. 1. &c. Rev. 13. 10. 10r. 3. 6, 7, 8. Dem. 32. 43. Isa. 10. & 14. 6, 7, 8. Mar. 26. 2 Chron. 22. 10. compared with c. 23. 12. to the end.*</sup>

10. That the Elect Saints of God, do by faith in the Word of God, and upon consideration of the usual Providence and Justice of God towards such Beasts and bloody Conquerors, most assuredly see their downfall, and with patience expect it, *Rev. 13. 9, 10. If any man have an ear, let him hear. (s) HE THAT LEADETH INTO CAPTIVITY, SHALL GO INTO CAPTIVITY. HE THAT*

M THAT

<sup>(e) See Joel 3. 5, 7, 8. Mar. 26. 2 Chron. 22. 10. compared with c. 23. 12. to the end.</sup>  
Sir Walter Raleigh's Preface to his History of the World, & Dr. Beards Theatre of Gods Judgements, on the 6 and 8 Commandments.

To the truly Christian Reader,

THAT KILLETH WITH THE SWORD, MUST BE  
KILLED WITH THE SWORD: Here is THE PAU-  
ENCE AND THE FAITH OF THE SANIS. O that  
we had this Patience and Faith within us now!

11. That upon this Faith and Assurance, the true Elect Saints of God, ~~neither will, nor do, nor dare to admire after, follow, worship or adore such B'afts, or their Image, nor receive their marks in their hands, or foreheads, though all the world else ready do it without opposition; enduring patiently rather to be warred upon, killed, secluded from buying or selling any thing, then unchristianly to adore, subject, or enslave themselves unto them,~~ Rev. 13. 2, 15, 17. Esther 8. 1, 107. 2 Kings 13. 13, 14. John 10. 4, 5. Dan. 3. 4. &c. 30. 1 King. 19. 18. 2 Chron. 11. 13. 19. 18.

Which serious & seasonable considerations, as they should daunt the hearts and allay the high Presumptuous Spirits of the most Successfull Conquerors, Powerfull ~~Usurpers~~ over, and violent Invaders of the Liberties, Lives, Estates, Rights, Properties of their Lawfull Superior or Christian Brethren, and all Subverters of the Laws, Priviledges, Parliaments, Government of their Native Country, especially against their Oathes and Troths: So the Medication on them, together with the contemplation of the infinite Power, Wisdom, Faithfulness, Justice, Holiness, Presence, and gracious Promises of God, have at all times and seasons hitherto, invincibly animated, steeled, fortified my Soul in the midit of all my sufferings, both under the domineering Prelates, Parliament - assaulting Army-Officers, the late Tyrannical cashiered Republicans, and all other self-created oppressing Powers, which (if not already dead and buried in the dust, with all their thoughts and high aspiring Projects,) yet shall certainly (f) die ere long like men, and become us dung; yea, they have enabled me by Faith and Patience to be (g) more than a conquering triumpher over them: and to sing aloud with magnummous David (a man

(f) Isa. 51. 6.  
12. c. 26. 13, 14.  
Psal. 82. 7.

Psal. 146. 354. after Gods own heart;) long before their down-fall. Psal. (g) Rom. 8. 36. 27. 1, 2, 3. The Lord is my Light and my Salvation, where shall I fear? The Lord is the strength of my life, of whom shall

'I be afraid? When the wicked over mine enemies and my foes  
came upon me to cut up my flesh, they stumbled and fell. Though  
an Host should encamp against me (as they did at Westminster,  
at my House, and in sundry Garrisons, where I was a Pri-  
soner under Souldiers) my heart shall not fear; though war  
should rise against me, in this I will be confident. I will not be  
afraid of ten thousands of people that have set themselves against  
me round about. And to cry out in Pauls words of defi-  
ance against all Enemies and Perils in the cause of my God  
and Country (uttered in his own and all true Elected  
Saints names) Rom. 8. 35, &c. Who shall separate us from the  
love of Christ? (or our Native Country, as well actively as,  
passively considered;) Shall tribulation? or distress? or per-  
secution? or famine? or pestil? or SWORD? (of an whole  
Army, or other Powers) Nay, in all these things we are more  
than Conquerors through him that loved us. For I am per-  
suaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor PRIN-  
CIPALITIES, NOR POWERS, nor things present, nor  
things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall  
be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ  
Jesus our Lord. And to say with him in all threatened  
Dangers for my sincere conscientious publick Services,  
Act. 20. 22. 24. And now I go bound to Jerusalem, not  
knowing the things that shall there befall me, save, that the Ho-  
ly Ghost witnesseth in every City, saying: That Bonds and Af-  
flictions wait for me. But none of those things move me, ne-  
ther count I my life dear unto me, so as I may finish my course  
with joy, and the Ministry which I have received of the Lord  
Jesus, &c. And verily me thinks the serious contemplation  
thereof, and of all the premises, with that of 1 Sam. 10. 12.  
Isa. 58. 12. 13. Jer. 4. 8. Ezech. 3. 2, to 6. Misch. 10.  
26. 28 coupled with Psal. 12. 2. If the foundations be de-  
stroyed, what can the righteous do? Prov. 24. 22, 23. My  
Son, fear thou the Lord and the King, AND MEDDLE  
NOT WITH THOSE WHO ARE GIVEN TO  
CHANGE; For their calamity shall rise suddenly (which  
we have seen verified in many late Changers, Mock Par-  
liaments, and self-created new Powers;) and who knoweth

therning of them but? Should now at last banish all base carnal fears out of all timorous hearts, rouse up the languishing, fearfull, dead, stupid Spirits of our degenerated *English Nation*, and engage them all unanimously, Undauntedly to claim, vindicate, regain, re-establish those ancient undoubted *Hereditary Fundamental Rights, Liberties, Priviledges, Franchises, Laws, Governments*, ( purchased with their *Ancestors* & their own dearest *Blood, sweat, Treasures*) which belong to the whole Kingdom; to all true *English Parliaments, Freemen* in general, and to every of them in particular; whereof they have of late years been forcibly disseised, or hypocritically cheated by pretended *Patrons, Preservers, and Propagators* of them; the substance whereof I have here set before their eyes in ~~an~~ brief *Propositions*, and by Records, Statutes, Presidents, Histories, *Contests, Resolutions* in all ages, undauntedly, (as their *Common Advocate*) asserted, fortified to my power, for their Encouragement and presidencie in this publick work. And if they will now but courageously second me herein, with their joyn<sup>n</sup>, bold, righefull *Claims, Votes, Declarations, and Resolute Demands* of all and every of their enjoyments, and future inviolable Establishments, with strenuous Oppositions of all *illegal perpetual Imposts, Excises, Contributions, Payments* (the chief *servis and cords* to keep them still in bondage by *Mercenary Forces*, supported only by them to keep them still in slavery) according to their *Oaths, Vows, Protests, Duties, manifold late Declarations, Remonstrances, Solemn League, Covenant*, and the encouraging *memorable Presidencies* of their *Ancestors* in former ages here, recorded; I dare assure them (by Gods blessing) a desired *good-Success*, whereof their <sup>a</sup> *Ancestors* never failed: no *mortal Powers* nor *Armies* whatsoever, having either *Impudence* or *Ability* enough to deny, detain them from them, if they will but <sup>(b)</sup> generally, unanimously, courageously, *im-18.2,3,4. Jer. portunately claim and demand them as their Birth-right*. But if they will still basely disown, betray, and cowardly desert both them and their *Assertors*, and leave them to a single combat with their combined *Jesuitical enemies* (whom

<sup>a</sup> See Part. I. p. 14, 15, 16.

<sup>(b)</sup> See 1 Sam. 8.4, to 12. ch. 12. 2. 2 Sam. 18.2, 3, 4. Jer. 38. 5.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

( whom none take care to discover, suppress or banish out of our Realms, where they now swarm more than ever ) and *Armed Invaders*; the Fate of our old *English Britons*, when they improvidently neglected to unite their Counsels, Forces against, and fought only singly with the invading united *Armies of the Romans*, is like to be *Englands* condition now; (i) *Datus pugnant singulis, vincuntur unusquisque*: the single Champions of our Liberties, Laws, Rights, will be easily over-powered, destroyed, for the present; and all others (by their unworthy *Treachery* and *Baseness*, in not adhering to, but abandoning their present Patrons) disengaged, disabled to propugne, regain them for the future: and the whole *Kingdom* vanquished, yea enslaved for eternity in all humane probability, to those who have broken your (h.) former yokes of wood, but instead thereof have made for, and put upon you yokes of Iron: and by the Jesuites Machiavilian Plots and Policies, will reduce you by degrees under a meer Papal yoke at last, having deeply leavened many in power and arms, with their forementioned most desperate Jesuitical Positions, Practises and Politicks, which will soon usher in the whole body of Popery, and all damnable Heresies whatsoever, by degrees, to the ruine of our Religion, as well as Laws and Liberties.

(i) *Tacitus in vita Agricola.*

(k) *Jer. 28.  
13, 14.*

Wherefore, seeing it neither is, nor can be reputed *Treason, Felony, Sedition, Faction*, nor any *Crime* at all, but a commendable bounden *Duty*, to which our *Protestations*, *Oaths*, *Leagues*, *Covenants*, *Reason*, *Law*, *Conscience*, our own private and the publick Interest, Safety of the Nation engage us, for all and every *Freeborn Englishman*, joyntly and severally to claim, maintain, preserve, by all just, honourable, publick and private wayes they may, their *unquestionable Hereditary Birth-rights*, *Laws*, *Liberties*, *Parliamentary Priviledges*, &c; here asserted and presented to them, after so much *Blood*, *Treasure*, *Labour* spent to rescue them out of the hands of old and late oppressing *Tyrants*; nor any *Offence* at all, but a *praise-worthy service* now in me, or any other, publickly to encourage them to this duty, ( and the strenuous defence of our endangered undermined

minged Protestant Religion, subverted with our Laws & Liberties, and living or dying together with them) at this present season, as I have done heretofore upon all occasions; And seeing none can justly censure them or me, for discharging our Oaths, Consciences, Covenants, Professions, Duties in this kinde, but such as shall thereby declare themselves Publick Enemies and Traitors to the whole Nation, Laws, Government, Parliaments of England, as the Resolutions, Presidents, \* herein cited, yea their own best friends, ( and our Reformed Religion too) have already adjudged them:

And seeing \* Sir Thomas Fairfax and the General Council of his Army, held at Putney Sept. 29. 1647. in their Declaration, concerning THE FUNDAMENTAL AUTHORITY & GOVERNMENT OF THE KINGDON; printed by their appointment, in these words: Whereas a Member of the General Council of this ARMY, hath publikely declared and expressed himself, THAT THERE IS NO VISIBLE AUTHORITY IN THE KINGDOM, BUT THE POWER & FORCE OF THE SWORD, (as others of them say since, and now both by words and deeds, without contrall.) We therefore the said GENERAL COUNCIL (to testify, How FARRE OUR HEARTS & MINDS ARE FROM ANY DESIGN OF SETTING UP THE POWER OF THE SWORD ABOVE OR AGAINST THE FUNDAMENTAL AUTHORITY & GOVERNMENT OF THE KINGDOM, & OUR READINESSE TO MAINTAIN AND UPHOLD THE SAID AUTHORITY;) have by a Free Voice (in the said Council, no man contradicting) judged the said Member, TO BE EXPELLED THE SAID COUNCIL.

which we hereby strongly desire to publish, as A CLEAR MANIFESTATION OF OUR DISLIKE & DISAVOWING SVCH PRINCIPLES OR PRACTISES, (which notwithstanding they have since shewed, pursued in the highest degree; and I desire them now to repent of, reform, and really make good,) have engaged to maintain and propugne with their Swords, what I here endeavour to defend, support, with my Pen. And seeing they insuled their Printed Papers,

\* Part. I. ch. I.

† See the Homilies against Dilobedience, & wilfull Rebellion.

\* A Declaration of the Engagements, Remonstrances, & Resolutions of Sir Tho. Fairfax, & the General Council of the Armie, London, 1647.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

A Declaration of the Engagerns, Remonstrants, Representations, Proposals, Desires, and Resolutions, from his Excellency Sir Tho: Fairfax, and THE GENERAL COVNCEL OF THE ARMY, for settling OF HIS MAJESTY IN HIS JVST RIGHTS, the PARLIAMENT in their JVST PRIVILEGES, and the SVBJECTS in their LIBERTIES & FREEDOMS. Also Representations of THE GRIEVANCES OF THE KINGDOM, & REMEDIES PROPOVNDED, for REMOVING THE PRESENT PRESSVRES WHEREBY THE SVBJECTS ARE BURDENED (and EXCISES, TAXES amongst the rest.) And the Resolutions of the Army, For the establishment of a firm & lasting peace IN CHVRCH & KINGDOM, printed by their own, and the Lower House special Order, London 1647: the self-same things I here contend, plead for, (which I wish they would now really make good by their future consultations and actions to avoid the just censures of mere Hypocrites and Impostors, as the whole World will else reape them.) I shall therefore exhort not only the whole Army, Army-Officers, and their General Council; but likewise the whole English Nation, and all real Lovers of their own or their Countries Liberties, Peace, Law, Ease, Safety, Religion, and future establishment in this common Cause, in the words of the Philistines one to another in a time of need, when they were greatly affraid, 1 Sam. 4. 9. Be strong and (1) quit your furies like men. O ye Philistines, that ye be not servants to the Hebrews, as they (1) x Cor. 16. have been to you. quit your furies like men, fight, &c. That so as the Apostle writes in the like case, Phil. 4. 27, 38.) Whether I come and see you, or be absent from you, I may know of your affaires, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the Gospel; ( and the ancient Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Rights, Priviledges, Parliaments, Government and Religion of our Realm, which the Jealous and their Instruments make their Master-piece totally to undermine and subvert.) And in nothing terrified by your Adversaries, which is to them an evident token of Perdition, but to you of Salvation, and that of God in the Presidents.

giants of your renowned Ancestors here recorded; the Pa-

(m) Recorded terms of (m) many gallant Pagan Romans, Gracians, who have in Livy, Tully, Plutarch, Valerius Maximus, and others.

Recta honesta  
digna Imperio,  
digna populo  
Romano, omnia  
pericula pro R.  
Army raised only for their just defence, or any other hu-

publica subire

mori pro patria.

Cicero de Fini-

bus bonorum,

&c. p. 365.

and Tusc.

Ques. p. 445.

mane Powers whatsoever; nor once adventure with united Spirits now at last, so much as confidently, boldly to ask thei're your unquestionable Birthrights at the Thrones of any mortal Grandees, your Fellow-Subjects, when God Almighty himself commands you, to come with boldness set o' his cause at the Throne of Grace, that you may obtain (not meer right as here, but) Mercy it self, and Grace to help in time of need, Heb. 4. 16. *Qui timide roget, docti negare;* you can neither hope for, nor ever obtain them for the future, but deserve eternally to forfeit them; and you and yours to be made slaves for ever: However I ( though these Collections peove successles ) shal carry this as a comfortable Cordial with me to my grave, *That I have faiſhfully discharged my Conscience and bounden Duty to my degenerous Nation, Country, by endeavouring all I could both to make and preferre as free indeed; to detect and prevent all Jesuſitical Plots and Practises, to undermine, imbroyl, divide, subvert, ruine it;* and used my utmost sincerest constant endeavours in my place and calling herein. But if through the Malice, Tyranny or Injustice of any prevailing Enemies of publick Freedom, or Jesuſitical Agents, I shall chance to suffer for it in any kind, ( as I have formerly done for most of my publick services of this nature) be it close-imprisonments, Fines, Pillories, Stigmatisings or Death it self; I shall onely say beforehand, as Gregory the Great did heretofore: Indict. 2. Epift. 78. *In causa qua Deo placere cupio, humanis non formido;* and as noble Heroick Esther did, in a like publick case for her endangered captivated Nation. (n) *If I perish, I perish; and this my unrighteous suffering, shall be a new Gloriouſ Crown*

(n) Esth. 4.  
16.

permissive, ordering, over-ruling Providence, with no wayes  
justify nor extenuate the guilt of any Traytors, Rebels, Mur-  
derers, Conspirators sinnes. Treasons, Rebellions, Murders,  
Regicides, Conspiracies, Rapines, Oppressions, or Wicked  
Devices, which he permitteth them to plot, all, accomplish;   
so it doth in no wise excuse them in Gods or Mens esteem  
from being the true Original Plotters, Contrivers, and imme-  
diate instrumental Actors of them; nor from the divine or  
humane Punishments which they in justice demerit; as is most  
evident by Gen. 50. 15. to 21. Psal. 37. 7. 9. Prov. 24. 10,  
21, 22. Job 20. 5, 6, &c. 1 Kings 13. 12. to 25. c. 15. 23.  
19. 30. c. 16. 1. to 30. specially ver. 7, 8. 2 Kings 11. 1. to  
17. c. 14. 5, 6. c. 15. 8. to 33. c. 17. 21, 22. 1 Sam. 8.  
2 Sam. 1. 2. to 17. c. 4. throughout. Hes. 1. 4. c. 8. 4, 5.  
Isay 29. 15, 16. c. 20. 5, 6, 7, &c. Act. 1. 16. to 21. c. 2.  
23. 1 Thess. 2. 14, 15, 16. Mat. 27. 3, 4, 5. compared to-  
gether. "And if we should look upon all our late Changer,  
Revolutions in our Kingdoms, Government, Church, Parlia-  
ments, Religion, Laws, ( wrought by the lesuise and their  
Instruments ) as the meer wonderfull immediate Productions  
and Glorious Operations of God himself in the World, and upon  
the instruments employed in them, only as Gods own precious  
chosen Saints and Servants, accomplishing nothing but his own  
determinate Will, Providence, Counsel, ( though to satisfie their  
own ambition, covetousnesse, malice, rapine, blood-thir-  
stinesse, lusts ) as many now proclaim them, and not as  
Conspirators, Treacherous, Perfidious, Perfidious Malefact-  
ors in the highest degree, as well as Jack Cade, Wat Tyler,  
Strafford, Canterbury, or the murderers of our Saviour, Jo-  
nnes, Isobeth, with other Kings heretofore, and of Henry  
the 3. and 4. of France, of late; there should then be no  
Traytors, Conspirators, Murderers, Signers, Treasons, Con-  
spiracies, Murders, Sinnes, in the world ( being all perpetra-  
ted by Gods permissive Providence ) no Law, nor Hell to pu-  
nish them; and it would be no les than a direct resiling,  
fighting against God and his Providence, for any Christians,  
Kingdoms, Kings, or Loyal Subjects, to pray against, resist,  
oppose the Treasons, Murders, Conspiracies, Vlurpations,  
Rebel-

Rebellions, Innovations, Plots, of any Jesuities or Romish Emissaries, or their under-Agents, against our Kings, Kingdoms, Governors, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties, Government and Religion; which would be professed Blasphemy, or Frenzy at least, for any man to affirm. ¶

2. That this Jesuite Parsons in his *Book of the Reformation of all the States of England*, as he prescribed Reforms to the Prince, Court, Counsellors, Noblemen, Bishops, Prelates, Pastors, Universities, Lawyers, Laws, in which he will have STRANGE METAMORPHOSES; so likewise, THE COVRT OF PARLIAMENT HE WILL HAVE BROVGHT TO BETTER FORM, as W. W. (a secular Priest) in *A Dialogue between a Secular Priest and a Lay Gentleman*, printed at Rhenes, An. 1601. p 95. Watson in his *Quælibet*, p. 92. to 96. 320. to 334. William Clark (a secular Priest in his *Answer to Father Parsons Libel*, p. 73. &c.) in direct terms attest. And may we not then justly suspect, that the late New-models and Reformations of our Kingdoms, Parliaments, Government, Laws, &c. (originally promoted by our \* *Army Counsels*, and Officers) proceeded primarily from the Jesuites' Projections & Plots against them, if the Statutes of 23 Eliz. c. 1. 27 Eliz. c. 2. 35 Eliz. c. 2. 3. 1. 2. 4. 5. 7. 7. 1ac. c. 6. and the manifold Declarations of both Houses of Parliament, *Exact Collection*, p. 491, 492, 497, 498, 616. 631, 666, 698, 813, to 828. may be judges? ¶

\* See their printed Declarations of June 14. 23. Aug. 1. 2. 1647. Their Agreement of the People, Jan. 1648. & Government of the Commonwealth of England, 1654. moulded by them.

3. That the Jesuites drift directly, or (immediately by means of \* CONQUEST intended for England) to bring it and all Christendom into an uproar, FOR COMMON SOVLDIERS TO EXAMINE THEIR SOVERAIGNS, WHAT TITLE THEY HOLD BY; that therupon themselves by craft, money and multitudes gathered together through their Policy, may bring England, (and then) Spain, and all the rest under their subjection and Monarchy: And that principally by this Jesuitical Position; That every Presopic or Tatarian multitude, getting once the stile and title of a PUBLICK STATE, or HELVETIAN COMMONWEALTH, may alter, change and innovate the course of inheritances

\* Do not many now boast, talk, write of such a Conquest by the Army over England?

and all Zealous Protestant Ecclesiam of England.

BRITISHES and succession TO CROWNS AND KINGDOMS, and also to every private Persons heritage holden in Fee simple: as (b) William Warham assures us in these very (b) Quodlibets, terms. And whether the Jesuites have not instructed our P. 322, 323, Army Officers and Common Soldiers upon this pretext, and 333, 334. for this very end, to extirpate their Sovereigns, yea, our Parliamentes Titles, Priviledges, and Powers too of late, and dis- pose of, reject, suppress them at their pleasure; let themselves, the whole Nation, with all in present power, in the fear of God, most seriously consider, without passion or affection, before it be over late.

4. That the Oathes of Supremacy and Allegiance ( which (c) 1 Eliz. c. 1. all Members of Parliament ought by Law to take, before 5 Eliz. c. 1. 1 Jac. they can sit, or vote as Members ) specially made and pre- c. 4. 3 Jac. c. 4. 5. 7 Jac. c. 6. 16 scribed by our most wise, zealous (c) Protestant Parliaments, Caroli. The to prevent the Treasonable plots and designs of Popes, Jesuites, Act for Trien- and Papists, against our Protestant Princes, Realms, Parlia- nual Parlia- ments, Religion, though confirmed by many Statutes, and con- taining in them only the Declaration of such a Duty, at every ments. See J. E. his true and well-affected Subject, not only by the bond of Allegiance, Right & Juris- but also by the COMMANDMENT OF GOD, ought diction of the to bear to the King, his Heirs and Successors; and nonibus Prelate and the Prince: cap. 15. Beca- \* person: infected with Popish Superstition formerly oppugned, nus, Bellarmine, (as the Prologue of the Statute of 7 Jacobi c. 6. positively resolves) have by late State innovators, not only been di- Lefsius, Euda- continued, suspended, but declaimed against and repealed (as much as in them lay) as (d) VNLAWFUL OATHS; the mon, Johannus, & others a- old Lawes against Jesuites and Popish Seminaries, discontinued, against this abrogated, or coldly executed. (e) The New Oath for Oath. abjuration of Popery, with all Bills against Jesuites and Pa- (d) See the pists, presented to the late King by both Houses the last Par- printed Edicts liament, and by him consented to in the Isle of Wight, wholly repealing the, & enforcing the Engage- laid aside, and quite buried in oblivion. The Solemn Pro- ment, An. 1649. testation, League and Covenant, prescribed by the last Par- (e) See the liaments taken by all the well-affected in all the 3 Kingdoms Propositi- (f) See the onies, to prevent the dangerous plots of Papists, Jesuites, Preface to the and our common enemies to destroy our Religion, Churches, Realms, Government, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties) quite Covenant. an in-

(e) See the Edicts for the Engagement, An. 1649.

antiquated, decried, detested, and a (g) New Engagement forcibly imposed under highest penalties and disabilities upon all men, diametrically contrary to these Oaths, Protestations and Covenants, which have been (by a new kind of Papal power) publickly dispensed with, and the people absolved from them, to be come sworn Homages to other new self-created Lords and Masters. And are not all these, with the late Proclaimed Universal Toleration and Protection of all Religions, to considerate zealous Protestants, strong Arguments of the Jesuites Predominancy in our late counsels, transactions, and changes of publike Government?

5. That the Nation of THE PRESENT GOVERNMENT, (in my weak apprehension) derived its original from the Jesuites late-invented (h) PRESENT CHURCH, the only Supreme Power and Judge of Controversies, which all men must submit unto, by a mere absolute blind Obedience, and implicit faith, without dispute by their determination: as they must do, by a like Jesuistical blind obedience (newly taught and obtruded on us) to that present Republican Government, and new Optimacy, and Popularity, lately set up instead of our Monarchy. Which two forms of Government, and many of us King and Monarchy, as they are the punishments of a peoples Sins, and the Transgressions of a Land by Gods own resolution, not Mercy. Hosea 10. 3. c. 1. 4. Jer. 18. 7. Prov. 28. 2. Ex. 19. 14. Lam. 4. 20. c. 5, 7, 8, 12. So they were the inventions of Factious Grecians at first, wch

\* Thucydides Hist. 1. 1. 3. Plutarch, Ly-  
sander, Aris-  
totel. Polit. 1. 4, & 5.  
(i) See Gratius de inv. Belli C. 1. 3. c. 15. \* put all their Cities into Combustions, fury, frenzy, and civil wars against each other, to their utter overthrow in conclusio-  
n: witness these verites of (i) Heniochus, a Greek Comedian: p. 337.

(k) Watsons Quodlibets, p. 320. 321. 322. 323.

(l) De Monum. Hipp. c. 25. 26.

(m) Conte de Galiaque, Guelds 1707. 1708.

Hill. p. 6. 8. p. 175, 176.

Tam gemina ad illas accessum Malitiae (TITAS  
QUÆ CUNCTA CONTURBARUNT: OPTIMA-  
EST nomen alteri: alteri POPULARITAS: (RUNT.  
Quarum misericordia PRIDEM EXTERNATÆ FU-

So the Jesuites, (k) Parsons, (l) Campanella, (m) Car. Richelieu, designed to introduce & set them up amongst us in Engl. Scott. and Ireland, of purpose to divide & destroy us by civil wars and combustions, and bring us under their political power at last,

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

as the marginal Authorities declare to all the world. And if this be undeniable to all having any sense of Religion, Peace \* Optandū qui-  
or publick Safety left within their breasts, is it not more than dem efs, & modo  
high time for us to awake out of our former lethargy, & for- Respublica sal-  
did, selfish stupidity, to prevent our ruine, by these and other futura sit, ut  
forementioned Jesuitical practises ? Or can any Englishman, Civitatis partes  
or real Parl. be justly offended with me for this impartial omnes quidem  
discovery of them ? Or for my endeavours to put all the dis- fibi consent, in  
located Members and broken bones of our old inverted fun- suoq; statu per-  
famental body Politick, into their due places, joints and pa- manent. At ut  
stures again, without which there is no more (n) possibility of praesenti statu  
reducing it to its, pr̄ sine health, ease, settlement, tranquillity, gaudient, Reges  
prosperity, or of preserving it from perpetual pain, inquieta- Regia dignita-  
tion, conlumption and approaching death, than of a natural tis splendore  
body whose principal members continue dis-joynted, and commouentur ;  
bones broken all in pieces, as all prudent State-Physicians Optimates Sc-  
must acknowledge. natoriae, bac  
enim illis pro  
virtutis sue  
præmio efs : po-  
pulus Ephoriae.

These five Considerations, together with the Premises ; Aristot. Polit. 1. 2. c. 7.  
will I presume sufficiently wipe off all the malicious scanda-  
lous Imputations, which *Militiere* and other Papists, have (n) See 1 Cor.  
injuriously cast upon the Principles and chief Professors of our 12. 12. to 31.  
Reformed Religion, in relation to the late exorbitant Procee- 25 H. 8. c. 22.  
dings against the King, Parliaments, the publike Revolutions, 26 H. 8. c. 3.  
Confusions, Atroxies both in our Church & Kingdoms ; and 1 Jac. c. 1, 2.  
revert them on the Jesuitical, Papal, seditious, Treasonable, 3 Jac. c. 1, 2.  
Antimonarchical Principles and Professors of their Religion, especially the *Jesuits* and *French Cardinals* (*Militiere* his late  
Lords and Masters) the original Contrivers, and chief clande-  
stine Promoters of them, as every day more and more discov-  
ers to the world. And withall abundantly justifie this my  
undertaking & impartial discovery of Jesuitical plots to ruin  
our Church, Religion, Kingdoms, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties,  
Government, against all malicious Enemies, Accusers, Malig-  
ners whatsoever, before all the Tribunals of God or Men,  
where I shall be ready to justifie them upon all occasions. In  
perpetual testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my Hand,  
and by Gods Grace shall ever be ready to seal them and the  
truth of God with my blood, if called out to do it.

Swainswick, Aug. 12. 1654.

William Prynne.

and when the sun is in the sky, the day is bright, and the birds sing, and the flowers are in bloom, and the world is full of beauty and joy. But when the sun is down, and the stars are out, and the world is dark, and the birds are silent, and the flowers are still, and the world is full of sadness and愁.



## A Seasonable Legal and Histo-

rical VINDICATION and Chronological Collection of the good Old Fundamental Liberties, Franchises, Rights, Laws of all English Freemanz (their best Inheritance, Birth-right, Security, against all Arbitrary Tyranny, Egyptian Slavery and Burdens) of late years most dangerously undermined, oppugned, and almost totally subverted under the specious feigned Disguise of their Defense, Enlargement, and future Establishment upon a just Basis.

To an universally received Principle, and experientiall truth, beyond all contradiction, That no naturall structure, no artificial building, no Civil or Ecclesiastical Corporations, Realms, Republics, Government, or Society of man; in Art or Science whatsoever, can possibly be erected, supported, established, preserved or continued in their being or well-being, without FOUNDATIONS; Whereon, as they were as first erected, so they must necessarily still depend; or else they will presently fall to utter ruine.

Hence it is (to wave all Humane Authorities in so clear  
1 John 17. 17. verity) that in Gods owa sacred untiring a word of  
2 Cor. 6. 7. Truth, we finde frequent mention of the naturall b Foundations  
Ephes. 1. 12. of the vast natural Fabrick of the Earth, Heavens  
Jam. 1. 18. and world it self, of the Artificial, Material c Foundations  
b2 Sa. 32. 8. 16. of the Material Temple, Wals, City of Gods own most  
Job 38. 4. 6. famous Jerusalem; and of private Houses: of the spi-  
5. Pro. 8. 19. 11. rituall d Foundations of the Spiritual Temple, City, Jerusa-  
24. 18. & 40. 21. lem, and whole Church of God; even Iesu Christ him-  
& 48. 13. & 51. self: of Doctrinal e Foundations, and first Principles of Re-  
13. 16. Zech. 12. ligion; Christianity, Salvation: yea, of the Politicall Foun-  
1. Mic. 1. 6. Joh. 17. 24. Eph 4. 4. dations of Kingdomes, Republike, Churches, Governments,  
Heb. 1. 10. & 4. States: Which being once shaken, undermined, subver-  
3. & 9. 26. ted, razed, or destroyed, bring unavoidable ruine and  
1 Pet. 1. 20. desolation upon them, ( Psal. 11. 3. Psal. 82. 5. Jer. 50. 15.  
c 1 Kin. 5. 17 & 6. 37 & 7. 9. 10. & 51. 25. 26. Micab 1. 6. 7. 9. ) Even as we daily see Castles,  
Ezr. 4. 13. & 6. Walls, Houses to fall instantly to the ground, and be-  
3. Pf. 137. 7. come an heap of Confusion, when their f Foundations are  
Ezech. 41. 8. blown up, decayed, or demolished.  
Hag. 2. 8.  
Zech. 4. 9. & 8. Upon which consideration, those publike Laws, which  
9. Mat. 7. 26. 27. establish, fence, fortifie, support the Fundamental Con-  
Luke. 6. 48. 49. stitutions, Rights, Liberties, Privilidges of any Nation,  
d Isa. 18. 16. & 54. 11. Ps. 87. 1. Kingdome, Republike, (essentiall to their being and sub-  
1 Cor. 3. 10. 11. 12. Heb. 11. 10. sistence) as a free or happy people, against the Invasions, un-  
1 Pet. 2. 6. Rev. 19. 19. derminings, encroachments of any Tyrants, Usurpers, Oppres-  
sors, or publike enemies, are usually stiled Fundamental  
21. 14. 19. Laws; and have ever been reputed so sacred, inviolable, im-  
e 2 Tim. 1. 9. mutable; in all ages, upon any pretences of necessity, or  
Heb. 6. 1. 2. publike safety, that most Nations, and our own English An-  
f Jer. 50. 15. ceftors above others, have freely chosen to hazard, yea,  
Mic. 1. 6. 7. lose their estates, lives, in their just defence, against such ex-  
Luke 6. 48. 49. orbitant tyranical Kings, and other Powers, who by force  
Matt. 7. 26. 27. or policy have endeavoured to violate, alter, or subvert them;  
rather than out of a Cowardice, Sottishnesse, Carelesnesse, or  
want of cordiall love to the Publike, to suffer the least in-  
fringement, repeal, or alteration of them to the lenthawing  
of themselves or their posterities to the arbitrary wils  
of such domineering Tyrants and Usurping Powers.

Now because, after all our *Old and New* (many years) bloody, costly, dangerous *Contests and Wars*, for the main-  
tenance of our good *Old Fundamental Liberties, Laws, Rights,*  
*Priviledges*, against all secret or open *underminers* of them,  
I clearly behold with grief of heart, that there is a *strang*  
*monstrous generation of new Tyrannical State-Heretics*,  
sprung up amongst us; who are grown so desperately  
impudent, as not only to write, but publikely to assert  
in print, in g Books printed by AUTHORITY, (even in g *Lilburn tried*  
*and cast p: 39,*  
*142. to 148,*  
*154. Canter*  
*Voice from the*  
*Temple, which*  
*persuades the*  
*subversion and*  
*abolishing of al*  
*former Laws,*  
*especially for*  
*Tribes and Mi-*  
*nisters support,*  
*unalterable;* but that the *State Physicians* (or rather  
*Mountebanks*) of our time (who are not tied up to them, but  
left free unto themselves) may lay them quite aside, either in  
part or whole, as they see cause. Yea, have now attained to such  
a super-transcendent Authority, that they may (as they as-  
sert) *lay aside all Parliaments & Parliamentary ways, & appoint*  
*something else, as more seasonable and proper to us, and as Pro-*  
*vidence makes way for it, if they see it more conducing to the*  
*safety and good of the Commonwealth* (that is, to their own  
privat Interests, Honors, Profits, Securities, Designes, Op-  
pressions, Rapines, gilded over with this specious pre-  
text) And then peremptorily conclude, *That to plead for*  
*these and other fundamental laws and liberties, as unalterable,*  
(though the only Bulwarks & Badges of our Freedom)  
is nothing else, but to *enslave the Nation*: for by such a  
Principle, people do not only lose their Liberty, but  
are brought under such a kinde of Tyranny, out of  
which (AS BEING WORSE THAN THE AEGYP-  
TIAN BONDAGE) there is no hope of deliverance.

An absurd Tyrannical Paradox, transcending any I ever yet met with in any Author: Stripping us naked of all our long-enjoyed Laws, Liberties, Franchises, great Characters at once; tending only to reduce, and perpetually inchcall us under such an absolute EGYPTIAN BONDAGE and Tyranny, without any hope of future deliverance from it, which some now endeavour\* to entitle on us and our posterities for ever, by an Iron law, and Yoke of Steel, in stead of restoring to us that glorious Freedome, which we have so long expected from them in vain.

\* See the Government of the Common-wealth of England, &c.

Art. 1. 1. 2. 2. 2.  
22, 24, 27, 28,  
29, 30, 31, 32,  
36, 39, 41.

And because I finde the generallity of the Nobility, Gentry, Clergy, Commonalty of our Nation, after all their late years expensivewy wars, and Parliamentary Disputes, for the defence and preservation of these our ancient Hereditary Fundamentall Charters, Laws, Liberties, Priviledges, so strangely degenerated both from themselves, and their Heroick prudent Ancestors, as that they are more readily inclined, upon every occasion, out of a base, unchristian, unmanly, un-english fear, or softish cowardise and stupidit, willing to deser, betray, surrender them all up into the hands of any invading usurpers, without the least Publike Claim, Dissertation, Defence, Dispute; then diligently or couragiouly to contend or suffer for them, of late they did: So as that which Paul once taxed in the slavish besotted Corinthian, 2 Epist. 1. 20. may be most truly averred of our degenerated, Infatuated English Nation: *If a man bring you into bondage, if a man debase you, if a man take of you, if a man exact himself ( above your Laws, Liberties, Franchises, Parliaments, Kings, Nobles, Properties, Lives, Consciencies, and all what is called God, or worshipped) if a man smite you on the face; notwithstanding all their manifold late\* Proclamations, Vows, Covenants, Remonstrances, Declarations and Publike Engagements to the contrary.* And withall, after diligent enquiry, discouering scarce one man of Eminency or Power in the Nation, nor so much as one of my degenerated temporizing Profession

\* Thef. 2. 4.

\* See Exact Collect, and a General collection of all Ordinances, &c.

Profession of the Law, (even when the \* whole body of our laws, and all its Professors, are violently assaile d, and devoted unto sudden ruine, by many lawlesse spirits) who hath so much courage, magnanimity, honesty, zeal, or cordial love to his Native Country, remaining in his brest, as manfully to appear in publike, for the strenuous necessary defence of these our Hereditary, fundamental laws, liberties, rights, franchises, (though their own, and every other English Freeman's best inheritance and security) for fear of being persecuted, Imprisoned, close Imprisoned, exiled, condemned, destroyed, as a Traitor, Rebell, Sedition person, enemy to the Publike, or disturber of the Kingdome's peace, by those who are truly such: I thereupon conceived, I could not undertake or performe a more necessary, seasonable, beneficiall service for my Country and ingrate unworthy Nation (who are now ashamed, afraid, for the most part, to own, visit, or be seen in the company of those Gallant men, much lese to assist, defend, and stick close unto them in their dangers, according to the sixth Article of their late Solemn League and Covenant, who have suffered, acted, and stood up most for their Common Liberties, Rights, Freedoms, Religion, against all invading Tyrants, to their great discouragement and betraying:) not pitch upon any Subject more proper for me, either as a common Lawyer, or as a constant Advocate and Sufferer for the publike Cause, and Liberties of the Nation, as well under our late extravagant Free State, as former Regal and Episcopal arbitrary Tyranny, than in this juncture of our publike affairs, to present our whole distractred unsettled Kingdome, with A Legal and Historical Vindication, and Chronological Collection, in all ages, of these Ancient, Hereditary liberties, Franchises, Rights, and all those National, Parliamentall, legal and Martiall Constituts, Laws, Charters, Records, Monuments of former and late times, for their Confirmation and inviolable observation, which our Ancestors and our selves have alwaies hitherto reputed Fundamental, unalterable and inviolable, upon any pretext, and have most eagerly contended

<sup>\*See Culpepers  
and Lilly's  
Merlins and  
Almanacks,  
John Canves  
Voice, Lib.  
tryed and cast,  
with many Pe-  
titions and  
Pamphlets a-  
gainst the Law  
and Lawyers.  
The Order of  
Aug. 19. 1633.  
That there  
should be a  
Committee sele-  
cted to consider  
of a New body  
of the Law for  
the government  
of this Common-  
wealth.</sup>

for, with the Prodigal expence of many millions of treasure, and whole Oceans of gallant Christian English blood.

And if upon the serious perusal of them, the universality of our degenerated Nation, after their many solemn Protests, Vows, Leagues, Covenants, Remonstrances, inviolably to defend and maintain them, shall still so undervalue them now at last, (as most actually have done) as not to esteem them worth the owning, maintaining, vindicating, or perpetuating any longer, & thereby draw upon their heads, the reall guilt of all those bloody Wars, Murders, Tumults, Violences, Rapines, Oppressions, Sins, Mischief, illegal Taxes, Excises, Exorbitancies, which their many late years pretended necessary defence and preservation have brought upon our three whol Nations; let them henceforth, like so many dastardly conquered bondslaves, <sup>\*Exod. 21.6.</sup> bored through the ears, publikely disavow, disclaim, renounce, abjure them, for themselves and their posterities for ever, as mere wretched toys, or pernicious inventions, fit only to kindle perpetual wars and discords between King and People, head and members, superiours and inferiours; or, as poor *London Cobwebs*, (as now they prove) able to hold none within compasse, but the very weakest *Flies*, broken thorow with ease and impurity, by every greater *Fly*, or armed *Waspe*, creeping up into any Power or Supreme Authority, by right or wrong; and swept down to the very ground, by every new *Broom* in the hand of upstart Junapators.

But if upon saddest deliberation, they shall really estimate them to be such incomparable, rich, precious Jewels, and ancient Inheritances, as are every way worth the infinite Treasures, Wars, Blood, Gares, Consultations, Troubles, heretofore and of late years expended, both to gain, retain, confirm, and perpetuate them, to them and their Posterities for ever, as their principal earthly security, and beatitude; I hope they will all then unanimously conclude with the Poet,

*Non minor est uirtus quam querere, PARTA TVERI:*  
And both by their *Votes* and *Actions*, return the self-same  
peremp-

peremptory magnanimous answer to any *Cesar, Conqueror, Potentate, power, or Combination* of men, whatsoever, (who shall endeavour by force, fraud, or flattery to compell or perswade them, to sell, resign, betray, or give up these their *Ancestral Priviledges, Inheritances, Birthrights* to them) as Naboth once did to King *Abab*, 1 Kings 21.3. *The Lord forbid it us, that we should give ( sell or betray) the INHERITANCE OF OUR FATHERS* ( and our Posterities likewise) unto thee, or you; though they should suffer for this Answer and Refusal, as much as Naboth did from bloody *Abab* and *Jezebel*.

But whatever low price or estimate this *spurious, stupid, fordid, slavery* may set upon these richest Pearls; yet for my own particular, upon serious consideration of these *Chronological Collections*, and the Solemn Oaths, Protests, Vows, *League and Covenant*, obliging me to defend them to the uttermost; I value the whole *Nations publick, and my own* ( with my cordial friends) private interest in them, at so high a rate, that I would rather chearfully part with ten thousand lives, and all the treasures of the Nation, Indies, were I owner of them, then wittingly, negligently, or unworthily sell, betray, or resign them up to any *mortals or powers* whatsoever, upon any pretences or Conditions, after all my former Publications, Contests, Sufferings, Losses, &c. for their just defence. And to the end all others might now take special notice of the inestimable value our Ancestors in all ages have set upon them, and what successive wars, conflicts, they have chearfully undertaken for their preservation; I have at *vacant hours* compiled this ensuing *Vindication and Collection* of the old *Fundamental liberties, franchises, laws* of all *English freemen*, which I shall bequeath to my most beloved *Native Country*, in general, and every reall *Heroick Patron* of them in particular, as the best *Legacy* I can leave behinde me, both for their present and future *Enfranchisement, Immunity, security*, from all *Arbitrary Tyranny, Slavery and yokes of Bondage*, under which they have a long time *langushed, and lamented in the bitterness of their spirits*.

The

The Method I resolve herein to pursue, is this:

1. I shall produce some punctuall *Authorities* of moment, to evidence, *That the Kingdome and Freeman of England, have some ancient Hereditary just Rights, Liberties, Priviledges, Franchises, Laws and Customs, properly called FUNDAMENTAL; and likewise a Fundamental Government, as wayes to be altered, undermined, subverted directly or indirectly, to the publique prejudice, under pain of highest Treason in the persons who shall attempt it, especially by fraud, force, or armed power.*

2. I shall, in brief *Propositions*, present you with the chiefest and most considerable of them, which our Ancestors in former ages, and our late real *Parliaments* have resolved to be, and eagerly concended for, as FUNDAMENTAL, essential to their being and well-being, as a Free People, Kingdome, Republique, unwilling to be enslaved under any *Rule of Tyranny*, any arbitrary Impositions or Powers whatsoever. Then give you a briske touch of their severall late *unparalleled violations*, both by the Edicts and Actions of usurping Powers.

3. I shall in a *Chronological* way, render you a large *Historical Catalogue of Natural, Parliamental, civil and military, Contests, Votes, Declarations, Remonstrances, Oaths, Vows, Protestations, Covenants, Engagements, Excommunications, Confirmations, Evidences, Statutes, Charters, Writs, Records, Judgments and Authorities* in all ages, undeniably evidencing, declaring, vindicating, establishing, perpetuating these *Fundamental Hereditary Rights, Liberties, Priviledges, Franchises, Customs, Laws, and abundantly manifesting the extraordinary care, industry, zeal, courage, wisdom, vigilance of our Ancestors, to defend, preserve, and perpetuate them to posterity, without the least violation or diminution.*

4. I shall vindicate the excellency, indigency, and lawfullity of trying all *Misdemeanors* whatsoever, by *Jurors of their Peers*, upon *legal Processa and Judgments*, and maintaining the *Honesty, Justice, impartiality, dangerous consequences* of admitting or introducing any other form of *trial*, by *New, Arbitrary Marciall Commissions, or Courts of High Justice*.

rice, ( or rather <sup>\*</sup>injustice) inconsistent with, and destructive to the Fundamental Rights, Liberties, Privileges, Laws, Franchises of the English Nation, and of most dangerous Precedent to Posterity; being set up by the greatest pretenders to publike Liberty, Law, and the chiefest incivillers against Arbitrary Regal Tyranny and Power, which never publikeley established such arbitrary illegal Tryals and new Butcheries of Christian English Freemen, by any law, and may fall to imitate them in future Ages, by their example. Each of these I intend to prosecute in distinct Chapters in their order.

<sup>\*Summumjus,</sup>  
est summa in-  
juria, Cic. de  
Officiis p. 611,

### CHAP. 1.

1. For the first of these: That the Kingdom and Freedome of England, have some ancient Hereditary Rights, Liberties, Privileges, Franchises, Laws and Customs, properly called FUNDAMENTAL, and likewise a FUNDAMENTAL GOVERNMENT, no wayes to be altered, undermined, subverted, directly or indirectly, under pain of High Treason in those who shall attempt it; especially by fraud, force, or armed power.

I Shall confirm the first part of it, by these ensuing judicial Authorities of moment, against those <sup>\*</sup>traiterous late published Pamphlets, which professedly deny it, and endeavour, a total derogation of all former Lawes, to set up a New modell and Body of the law, to rule us for the future, according to their pleasures.

The first is, the expresse words of the great Charters of the Liberties of England, granted by King John, Anno 1215, in the 16 year of his Reign; Regranted and confirmed by King Henry the third, in the 9 year of his Reign, and sundry times afterwards: and by King Edward the first, in the 25 and 28 years of his reign: Wherein these three Kings successively, by their several grand Charters, under their great Seals, did grant, give, and confirm, to all the Nobility,

<sup>\*Lilburn tried  
and cast p. 39,  
40, 141, to 148  
and elsewhere.</sup>

John Cannes a  
Voice from  
the Temple.

John Rogers  
Mene Tekei,  
Perez, p. 6.

Lilly and Cul-  
peper in their  
Prognosticati-  
ons An. 1613,  
& 1614. See  
the Armies Pro-  
posals.

*City, Clergy, and Freemen of the Realm of England, for themselves and their Heirs for ever, the several customs, liberties, &c. contained in these Charters; to have and to hold them, to them and their Heirs, from them and their Heirs for ever. Concluding their Charters thus: All these Customs and Liberties aforesaid, which we have granted to be holden within this our Realm, as much as appertaineth to Us and our Heirs, we shall observe. And all men of this our Realm, as well Spiritual as Temporal (as much as in them is) shall observe the same against all persons in like wise: And we have granted unto them, that neither we nor our Heirs, shall procure or do any thing whereby the Liberties in these Charters contained, shall be infringed or broken: We ratifying and approving these Gifts, and Grants aforesaid, confirm and corroborate all the same, for Us and our Heirs perpetually; and by these presents (as the later Charters can do renew the same: willing and granting, "For us and our Heirs, that these Charters and all and singular their Articles, for ever shall be stedfastly, firmly, and inviolably observed.*

Sir Edward Coke (that reverend learned Judge and Professor of our Laws) in his Preface to his *Second Institutes*, and p. 2. and 77. thereof, wherein he Comments on this great Charter, (printed by two Orders of the House of Commons in Parliament, dated 12. May 1641. and 30. June 1642. Resolves in direct terms, *That the great Charter, was for the most part declaratory of the principle grounds of the Fundamental Laws of England: That these words therem, [For us and our Heirs for ever] were added, to avoid all scruples: That this great Parliamentary Charter might live and take effect in all succession of Ages for ever. A clear resolution, that the principal Liberties, Customs, Laws, contained in these great Charters, and ratified by them, are both FUNDAMENTAL, PERPETUAL, & UNALTERABLE; being since confirmed in all points by near forty several special Acts of Parliament in succeeding Parliaments: and likewise by the Solemn Oathes of our Kings, Nobles, Judges, great Officers, and of the People too, (all several times sworn to defend and maintain the same) and by sum-*

sundry solemn Excommunications against the infringers or commissaries of them in any kinde; as I shall prove more fully in the third Chapter.

The second is, the punctuall resolution of the whole Parliament of 1. Jacob, even in a Printed Act of Parliament, chap. 2. and of King James himself, in his Speech therein, as is evident by this Prologue to that Act; Whereas his most excellent Majestie hath been pleased, out of great wisdome and judgment, not only to represent unto us, by his own prudent and Princely Speech, on the first day of this Parliament, how much be desired (in regard of his inward and gracious affection to both the famous and ancient Realms of England and Scotland, now united in Allegiance and Loyall Subjection IN HIS ROYALL PERSON,\* TO HIS MAJESTY AND HIS POSTERITY FOR EVER.) that by a spee-  
ty, mature and sound deliberation: such a future Union might  
be done, as should make perfect that mutual love, and uniformity  
of manners and Customs, which Almighty God in his Providence,  
for the strength and safety of both Realms, hath so herte already  
begun, in apparent sight of all the world; but also hath vouchsafed  
to expresse many wyes, how farre it is, and EVER SHALL  
BE FROM his Royal and sincere care and affection to the  
Subjects of England, TO ALTER OR INNOVATE  
THE FUNDAMENTALL AND ANCIENT LAWS,  
PRIVILEGES, and GOOD CUSTOMES OF THIS  
KINGDOME; whereby not onely HIS ROYAL AU-  
THORITY, but THE PEOPLES SECURITY OF  
LANDS, LIVINGS, and PRIVILEGES (both in geze-  
ral and particular,) ARE PRESERVED AND MAIN-  
TAINED; and by the ABOLISHING or ALTERA-  
TION of the which, it is impossible, but that present confusion  
will fall upon the whole State and Frame of this KINGDOME,  
&c. In which memorable clause, these four things are  
obsviue.

1. That the Kingdome and People of ENGLAND have Fundamental, ancient good Laws, Priviledges, and Customs. 2. That there are no wyes to be ALTERED, or INNOVATED; and that it alwaies hath been,

\* See 1. Jac. c. 1.  
3. Jac. c. 1. 4.  
7. Jac. c. 6.

*lity, Clergy, and Freemen of the Realm of England, for them-  
selves and their Heirs for ever, the several customs, liberties  
therein contained, to have and to hold them, to them and  
their Heirs from thence and their Heirs for ever. Conclu-  
ding their Charters thus. All these Customs and Liberties  
aforesaid, which we have granted to be holden within this our  
Realm, as much as appertaineth to Us and our Heirs, we shall  
observe. And all men of this our Realm, as well Spiritual  
as Temporal (as much as in them is) shall observe the  
same against all persons in likewise: And we have granted unto  
them, that neither we nor our Heirs, shall procure or do  
any thing whereby the Liberties in these Charters con-  
tained, shall be infringed or broken: We ratifying and ap-  
proving these Grants, and Grants aforesaid, confirm and cor-  
roborate all the same, for Us and our Heirs perpetually:  
and by these presents (as the later Charters can do renew the  
same: willing and granting, "For us and our Heirs, that these  
Charters and all and singular their Articles, for ever shall be  
stedfastly, firmly, and inviolably observed.*

Sir Edward Coke (that reverend learned Judge and Pro-  
fessor of our Laws) in his Preface to his *Second Institutes*,  
and p. 2. and 77. thereof, wherein he Comments on this  
great Charter, (printed by two Orders of the House of  
Commons in Parliament, dated 12. May 1641. and 30.  
June 1642. Resolves in direct terms, That the great Char-  
ter, was for the most part declaratory of the principle grounds  
of the Fundamental Laws of England: That these words  
therein, [For us and our Heirs for ever] were added, to avoid all  
scruples: That this great Parliamentary Charter might live and  
take effect in all succession of Ages for ever. A clear resolution,  
that the principal Liberties, Customs, Laws, contained in  
these great Charters, and ratified by them, are both  
**FUNDAMENTAL, PERPETUAL, & UNALTERABLE;**  
being since confirmed in all points by near fourty se-  
veral special Acts of Parliament in succeeding Parlia-  
ments: and likewise by the *Solemn Oathes* of our Kings,  
Nobles, Judges, great Officers, and of the People too, (all  
several times sworn to defend and maintain the same) and by  
Inns.

sundry solemn Excommunications against the infringers or contemners of them in any kynde; as I shall prove more fully in the third Chapter.

The second is, the pondruall resolution of the whole Parliament of 1 Jacobi, even in a Printed A<sup>c</sup>t of Parliament, chap. 2, and of King James himself, in his Speech therein, as is evident by this Prologue to that A<sup>c</sup>t; *Whereto his most excellent Majestie hath been pleased, out of great wisdome and judgment, not only to represent unto us, by his own prudent and Princely Speech, on the first day of this Parliament, how much he desired (in regard of his inward and gracious affection to both the famous and ancient Realms of England and Scotland, now united in Allegiance and Loyall Subjection IN HIS ROYALL PERSON\*, TO HIS MAJESTY AND HIS POSTERITY FOR EVER) that by a spe-*

\* See 1 Jac. c. 1  
3. Jac. c. 1.4.  
7 Jac. c. 6.

*dy, mature and sound deliberation; such a future Union might follow, as should make perfect that mutual love, and uniformity of manners and Customs, which Almighty God in his Providence, for the strenght and safety of both Realms, hath so farre already begun, in apparent sight of all the world; but also hath vouchsafed to expresse many wayes, how farre it is, and EVER SHALL BE FROM his Royall and sincere care and affection to the subjects of England, TO ALTER OR INNOVATE THE FUNDAMENTALL AND ANCIENT LAWS, PRIVILEGES, and GOOD CUSTOMES OF THIS KINGDOME; whereby not onely HIS ROYAL AUTHORITY, but THE PEOPLES SECURITY OF LANDS, LIVINGS, and PRIVILEGES (both in general and particular) ARE PRESERVED AND MAINTAINED; and by the AEOLISHING or ALTERATION of the which, it is impossible, but that present confusion will fall upon the whole State and Frame of this KINGDOME, &c. In which memorable clause, these four things are obteynable.*

1. That the Kingdome and People of ENGLAND have Fundamental, ancient good Laws, Priviledges, and Customs.
2. That there are no wayes to be ALTERED, or INNOVATED; and that it alwayes hath been,

is, and ever shall be, far from the thoughts and intents of all good Kings, Governors and Parliament, who bear a sincere care and affection to the Subjects of England, to alter or innovate them. 3. That by these ancient good Laws, Priviledges and customs, not only the King's Regall Authority, but the peoples Security of lands, living, and priviledges, ( both in general and particular ) are preserved and maintained. 4. That by the abolishing or altering of them, it is impossible, but that present confusion will fall upon the whole state and frame of this Kingdom: Which I with all Innovators and New Modellers of our Laws and Government would now at last lay seriously to heart, and the whole Kingdome and English Nation sadly consider, who have found it an experimental truth of late years, and no imaginary feigned speculation.

3. The third is, The Remonstrance of the whole House of Commons in Parliament, delivered in Writing to King James, in the Parliament of 7. Jacobi, Anno 1610. which begins thus:

To the King's most Excellent Majestie.

Most Gracious Sovereign,  
Whereas we your Majesties most humble Subjects, the Commons assembled in Parliament, having received first by Message, and since by speech from your Majestie, a Command of restraint, from debating in Parliament your Majesties Right of imposing upon your Subjects Goods exported out of, or imported into this Realm, yet allowing us to examine the grievance of these impositions, in regard of quantity, time, and other circumstances of disproportion thereto incident: We your humble Subjects nothing doubting, but that your Majestie had no intent by that command, to infringe the ancient and fundamental Rights of the Liberty of PARLIAMENT, in point of exact discussing of all matters concerning them and their Possessions, Goods, and Rights whatsoever: Which yet we cannot but conceive to be done in effect by this Command; Do with all humble Duty make this Remonstrance to your Majestie.

See the 1 and 6  
Proposition in  
cap. 2.

First,

First, we hold it an Ancient, general and undoubted Right of Parliament, to debate freely all matters, which do properly concern the Subject and his Right or Estate: which freedom of debate being once foreclosed, the essence of the Liberty of Parliament is withall dissolved, &c.

Here the whole House of Commons, in a speciall Remonstrance to King James, (printed and published by Order of a Committee of the House of Commons for licensing of Books, dated 20 Maii 17. Caroli 1641.) Declare, resolve, vindicate and maintain, one principal, ancient, fundamentall, general, undoubted right of the Liberty of Parliament, against the Kings intrenchement on it: *Of which should they be but once foreclosed, the Essence of the Liberty of Parliament is withall dissolved.*

And peradventure it may not be unworthy the most serious disquisition of the next ensuing nominal or real Parliament, to examine, whether some clauses and restrictions in the 9. 12. 14. 16. 17. 21. 22. 24. 25. 27. 30. 32. 33. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. Articles (or strings) of the New Instrument intituled, *The Government of the Common-wealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the Dominions thereto belonging;* as it was publickly declared at Westminster the 16. day of December 1653, &c. do not as much, nay far more intrench upon the ancient Fundamental, General undoubted Rights and Liberty of Parliament, and parliamentary free debates, to the dissolution of the Essential liberty of all future Parliaments, as this Command of King James did, or as the Bishops late Causus, imposed on the Clergy in and by the Convocation, Anno 1640. ever did; and this clause in their, &c. Oath then made, (now \*imitated by others, who condemnedit). *I. A. B. do swear, that I will never give my consent to alter the Government of this Church, by Arch-bishops, Bishops, Deans and Arch-Deacons, &c. as it stands now established, and as by right it ought to stand.* Which clause and Oath imposed one-ly on the Clergy-men.

Resolved by the whole House of Commons and Peers too, in Parliament, without any dissenting voice, December 16. 1640. to be a most dangerous & illegal Oath, contrary of them.

\* See the Government of the Common-wealth of England, 1641. Article 20. the writing and printed returns for new Millions; and enforced new Test and Engagement imposed on the three Kingdoms and new members, (including most

to the Rights and Privileges of Parliament, and to the Fundamental Laws and Statutes of the Realm, &c. and of dangerous consequence: the contriving wherof was objected to the late Archbishop of Canterbury, in his original Articles of High Treason, for which amongst other things he lost his head.

The fourth is the notable Petition of Grievances of the whole House of Commons in Parliament, presented to King James in the seventh year of his Reign, after their Vote against his Right to levy *Impositions* on goods imported, or exported, without assent and grant of Parliament, in these ensuing words.

See Proposition  
1. in ch. 2.

Nota.

\* O how are they now degenerated!

\* And should they not be so now then?

\* And should we now at last fail herein?

\* How dare then any self created powers who are neither Kings nor Parliaments now arrogate to themselves, or exercise such a super-Regal power and Prerogative, against all our Laws and their own instruments and oaths.

The Policy of this your Majesties Kingdomes, appropriates unto the Kings of this Realm, with assent of Parliament, as well the Sovereign power of making Laws, as that of taxing or imposing upon the Subjects Goods or Merchandises, wherein they have justly such a property, as may not without their consent be altered or changed: this is the cause that the people of this Kingdome, as they have \* ever shewed themselves faithfull and loving to their Kings, and ready to aid them in all just occasions, with voluntary contributions: so have they been\* ever careful to preserve their own Liberties and Rights, when any thing hath been done to prejudice or impeach the same. And therefore when their Princes, either occasioned by war, or by their own bounty, or by any other necessity, have without consent of Parliament set on *Impositions*, either within the Land, or upon commodities exported or imported by the merchants, they have in open Parliament complained of it, in that it was done without their consents, and thereupon \* never failed to obtain a speedy and full redresse, without any claim made by the Kings, of any Power or Prerogative in that point. And though the Law of property be original, and carefully preserved by the Common Laws of this Real, WHICH ARE AS ANCIENT AS THE KINGDOME ITSELF, yet those famous Kings, for the better contentment and assurance of their loving Subjects, agreed, THAT THIS OLD FUNDAMENTAL RIGHT (observe the words) should be further declared, and established by Acts of Parliament, wherein it is provided, That no such Charge shall ever be laid

laid upon the People, without their common Consents, as may appear, by sundry Records of former times.

We therefore your Majesties most humble Commons affembled in Parliament \* following the example of this worthy care of our Ancestors, and out of our Duty to those for whom we serve, finding that your Majesty, with the advice of your Lords and Commons, hath lately (in times of Peace) Set both greater Impositions, and farre more in number, than any your Noble Ancestors did ever in time of Warre, do with all humility present this most just and necessary Petition unto your Majesty, THAT ALL IMPOSITIONS SET WITHOUT ASSENT IN PARLIAMENT, MAY BE QUITE ABOLISHED AND TAKEN AWAY. And that your Majesty likewise, in imitation of your Royal Progenitors, will be pleased, that a Law in your time, and during this Session of Parliament, may be also made, to declare, That all Imposition of any kinde, set, or

*Nota.*  
• And ob that  
we would fol-  
low it now  
and out of Par-  
liament ?

to be set upon your people, their Goods or Merchandises, save onely by common Consent in Parliament, are and shall be Void; wherein your Majesty shall not onely Give your Subjects great Satisfaction in point of their Right; but also bring exceeding joy and comfort to them, who now suffer partly through the abating of the price of Native Commodities, and partly through the raising of all Forraign, to the overthrow of Merchants, and shipping, the causing of general dearth, and decay of all wealth among your people; who will be thereby no leſſe discouraged, than disabilited to supply your Majesty when occasion shall require. In which memorable Petition, the whole House of Commons resolve in direct terms: 1. That the Subjects of England have old original Fundamental Rights (and more particularly) in the Property of their Goods, exempted from all Impositions whatsoever, in times of peace or war, without their common consent in Parliament; declared and establisched both by the ancient and common law of England and sundry Acts of Parliament, and records of former times. 2. They declare, the constant vigilant care, zeal of our ancestors and former Parliaments in all ages, inviolably to maintain, defend, preserve the same, against all encroachments, together

with their own care, duty and vigilancy in this kind in that very Parliament. 3. They relate the readiness of our Kings to ratifie these their *Fundamental Rights* by new *Acts of Parliament*, when they have been violated in any kinde. 4. They declare the benefit accruing both to Prince and People, by the inviolable preservation and establishment of this old *Fundamental right*, and the mischiefs accruing to both by the infringement thereof; by arbitrary illegall impositions, without full consent in Parliament. 5. They earnestly (in point of Conscience, prudence, and duty to those for whom they served) Petition his Majesty, for a new *Law and Declaration*, against all new Impositions and Taxes on inland Goods, or Merchandises imported or exported, without the peoples free consent in Parliament, as null, void, utterly to be abolished and taken away: Whether it will not be absolutely necessary for the whole English Nation, and the next ensuing National, or reall Parliament, to prosecute, enact, establish such a Declaration and Law against all such former and future arbitrary, illegal, oppressive Taxes, Impositions, Excises, that have been imposed and continued for many years together on the whole kingdome, by \* new extravagant, self-created, usurping ARMY-OFFICERS, and other Powers, without free and full consent of the people in Lawfull English Parliaments, against all former Laws, Declarations and Resolutions in Parliaments, to their great oppression, enslaving, undoing, in far greater proportions, multiplicity, and variety, than ever in former Ages, without the least intermission; and likewise against their late declared designe, to perpetuate them on our exhausted Nation, without alteration or diminution, (beyond and against all presidents of former Ages) both in times of Peace and War, for the future, by the 27, 28, 29, 30, 31. Articles of the Instrument entituled, *The Government of the Common-wealth of England, &c.* I remit to their most serious considerations to determine, if ever they resolve to be English Free-men again, or to imitate the *wisdom, prudence, zeal, courage,*

\*See the white-hall Ordinances for the six months contribution, Excise, till 1656, tuncage & Pouage till 1658. beyond all Pre- sidents in any age, and the very words and letter of the 30. Article of their government.

courage and laudable examples of their worthy Ancestors, from which they cannot now degenerate without the greatest Infamy, and enslaving of themselves with their Posterities for ever, to the arbitrary wills of present or future *Usurpers* on their Fundamental Rights and Liberties, in an higher degree then ever in any precedent Ages, under the greatest Conquerours or Kings, after all their late, costly, bloody Wars, for their Defence against the beheaded King.

5. The fifth is, *A learned and necessary Argument made in the Commons House of Parliament, Anno 7. Jacobi, to prove, That each Subject hath a Property in his Goods; shewing also, the extent of the Kings Prerogative in Impositions upon the Goods of Merchants, exported or imported, &c. by a late learned Judge of this Kingdome, printed at London by Richard Bishop, 1641. and Ordered to be Published in Print, at a Committee appointed by the Honourable House of Commons, for examination and Licensing of Books, 20. Maii 1641.* In which Parliamentary Argument, p. 8.11.16. I finde these direct Passages: *That the New Impositions contained in the Book of Rates, imposed on Merchandizes, imported and exported by the Kings Prerogative, and Letters Patent, without consent in Parliament, is against the natural Frame and Constitution of the Policy of this Kingdome, whithin, TUS PUBLICUM REGNI, AND SO SVBVERTETH THE FUNDAMENTAL Nota.*

LAW OF THE REALM, and introduceth a new Form of State and Government: *Can any man give me a reason, why the King can only in Parliament make Laws? No man ever read any Law, whereby it was so ordained; and yet no man ever read, that\* any King practised the contrary; therefore IT IS THE ORIGINAL RIGHT OF THE KINGDOME, AND THE VERY NATURAL CONSTITUTION OF OUR STATE AND POLICY, being one of the highest Rights of Sovereign Power. If the King alone out of Parliament may impose, \*HE ALTERETH THE LAW*

*Laws and Ordinances, amounting to near 700. pages in folio in a few moneths space. And do not those do so, who now lay Monetarie Taxes, Excises, Customs and New Imposts on us daily, out of Parliament, and that for many moneths and years yet to come, against the Letter of their own Instrument and Oath too? \**

*\* Yet those who have pulled down our Kings, as Tyrants, now presume to do it; misname their New White-hall*

OF ENGLAND IN ONE OF THESE TWO MAIN FUNDAMENTAL POINTS; he must either take the Subjects Goods from them, without assent of the Party, which is against the law, or else he must give his own Letters Patents the force of a law, to alter the property of the Subjects goods, which is also against the Law.

In this and sundry other Arguments (Touching the Right of Impositions) in the Commons House of Parliament by the Members of it, arguing against them, it was frequently averred, and at last Voted and Resolved by the House, 7. Jacobi. That such Impositions without consent in Parliament, were **\* AGAINST THE ORIGINAL FUNDAMENTAL LAWS AND PROPERTY OF THE SUBJECT**, and Original Right, Frame and Constitution of the Kingdome; as the Notes and Journals of that Parliament evidence: An expresse parliamentary Resolution in point, for what I here assert.

6. The sixth is, A Conference desired by the Lords, and had by a Committee of both Houses, concerning the Rights and Privileges of the Subjects. 3. Aprilis 4. Caroli 1628. entered in the Parliament Journal of 4. Caroli, and since printed at London 1642. In the Introduction to which Conference, Sir Dudley Digges by the Commons House Order, used these expressions: *My good Lords, whilst we the Commons, out of our good affections, were seeking for money, we found, I cannot say a Look of the Law, but many A FUNDAMENTAL POINT THEREOF NEGLECTED AND BROKEN, which hath occasioned our desire of this Conference: wherein I am first commanded to shew unto your Lordships in general, That the Laws of England are grounded on Reason more ancient than Books, consisting much in unwritten Customs; yet so full of Justice and true Equity, that your most honorable Predecessors and Ancestors propounded them with, a \*NOL VNMVS MVTARI; and so ancient, that from the Saxon's days, notwithstanding the injuries and ruines of time, they have continued in most parts the same, &c. Be pleased then to know, THAT IT IS AN UNDOUBTED AND FUNDAMENTAL POINT OF THIS SO ANCIENT COMMON LAW*

\* 20. H. 3. c. 9.  
See Cooks 2. Inst. p. 97, 98.

OF ENGLAND, THAT THE SUBJECT HATH A <sup>Proposition 1,4</sup> TRUE PROPERTY IN HIS GOODS AND POSSESSIONS, *which doth preserve as sacred, that MEUM and TUUM, that is the Nurse of Industry, and the Mother of Courage, and without which, there can be no Justice, of which MEUM and TUUM is the proper object:* But the UNDOUBTED BIRTH-RIGHT OF FREE SUBJECTS, hath lately not a little been invaded and prejudiced by pressures, the more grievous, because they have been pursued by IMPRISONMENT, contrary to the Franchises of this Land, &c. <sup>Proposition 2,</sup> Which the Commons House proved by many Statutes and Records in all ages, in that Conference, to the full satisfaction of the Lords House; since published in print.

7. The Seventh is, The Vote the <sup>\*</sup> whole House of Commons, 16. December 1640. *Nullo contradicente, entered in their Journall, and printed in Diurnal Occurrences, page 13. That the Canons made in the Convocation* <sup>S: e canterbury Dooms, p. 19. Exact coll. p. 12.</sup> *(Anno 1640.) ARE AGAINST THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWS OF THE REALM, the Property and Liberty of the Subject, the Right of Parliament, and containe diverse things tending to Faction and Sedition.* Seconded in their Remonstrances of 15. December 1641.

8. The eight Authority is, <sup>\*</sup> The Votes of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the security of the Kingdome of ENGLAND and Dominion of Wales, 15. March 1641. *Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament to be forthwith printed and published (as they were then by themselves, and afterwards with other Votes and Orders.) Resolved upon the Question, nemine contradicente; That in case of extream danger, and his Majesties refusall, the Ordinance agreed on by both Houses for the MILITIA (to secure the Houses, Members and Priviledges of Parliament and Kingdome against ARMED-VIOLENCE, since brought upon them by the MILITIA of the Army) doth oblige* <sup>Exact coll. p. 112, 113.</sup> *D 2 the*

the people, and ought to be obeyed, by the FLINDAMENTAL LAWS OF THIS KINGDOME. A very vain and delitory Vote, if there be no such Law, as some now affirm.

\* Exall coll.  
p 850, 584,  
887, 888.

9. The ninth punctuall Authority is, \* a Second Declaration of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, concerning the Commission of Array; Printed by their speciall Order of 12. January 1642. Wherein are these observable passages, The main drift of all the power is to maintain, That the King by the Common Law may grant such a Commission of Array, as this is, upon this ground, because its for the Defence of the Kingdome: And, that the power, which he hath by right is by the Common Law, is not taken away by the Petition of Right, or any former Statute, but the King notwithstanding any of them, may charge the Subject for Defence of the Kingdome, so as the charge imposed come not to himself, nor to his particular advantage.

These grounds thus laid, extend not to the Commission of Array alone, but to all other charges that by Law only shall impose upon his Subjects, upon pretence of Defence of the Kingdome; for there is the same reason of Law for any other charge that is pretended for Defence, as for this. If his Majestie by the Common Law may charge his Subjects to finde Arms, and other things in the Commission enjoyned, because they are for Defence of the Kingdom; by the same reason of Law, he may command his People to build Castles, Ports and Bulwarks, and after to maintain them with Garrison, Arms, and Victuals, at their own charges: And by the same reason he may command his Subjects to finde Ships, and furnish them with Men, Ammunition and Victuals, and to finde Soldiers pay, "Coat and Conduite money; provide victuals for Soldiers, and all other things NECESSARY FOR AN ARMY; these things being as necessary for Defence, as any thing that can be done in execution of this Commission. And for that execution of the Petition of Right and other Statutes theron noted (if it should hold) hold it not otherwise, as well the Petition it self, as all other Laws that have been made for the Subjects benefit against Taxes and other charges, paid in this or any other Parliaments?

\* Do not the Army Officers now enforce them to all this without a Parliament, to support their usurped new Powers and Possessions, and establish themselves in a most absolute Sovereignty over our three kingdoms?

The

These Positions thus laid down and maintained, Do shake Nota.  
the Fundamental Laws of the Kingdome (the ancient  
Birth right of every Subject) both for the Property of  
his Goods, and Liberty of his Person: Nay, they strike at  
the root of Parliaments: What need his\* Majesty call Parlia-  
ments, to provide for Defence of the Realm, when himself may  
compell his Subjects to defend it without Parliaments? If these These expositu-  
lations reach to  
them at white-  
hall now, who  
presume to im-  
pose Taxes, Cu-  
toms, Excises  
and make bind-  
ing laws and  
Instruments  
for our whole  
3 Kingdomes,  
Nations, Par-  
liaments,  
which no King  
there ever did  
in like manner,  
nor their counse-  
lors in any age.

Upon that which hath been said in this and our for-  
mer Declaration, we doubt not but all indifferent men  
will be satisfied, that this Commission of Array, is full  
of danger, and inconvenience to the Subjects of England,  
**AND AGAINST THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWES OF THE LAND, both for PROPERTY OF GOODS,**  
**AND LIBERTY OF PERSON, &c.** As it is against  
**THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWES OF THE REALM,** so no statute makes it good, &c. And the Lords and Com-  
mons do upon the whole matter here conclude, That  
they are very much aggrieved; that after so many Decla-  
rations and solemn Protections made by his Majesty to  
rule by the known Lawes of this Land, his Majesty by advice  
of his ill Counsellors should be persuaded to set such a Commis-  
sion on foot, which is so clearly contrary TO THE  
**FUNDAMENTAL LAWES OF THIS LAND,** the  
Rights of Property, and Liberty of the Subject, contrary  
to former resolutions of Parliament, and to the Petition  
of Right.

I am certain, the generallies of the Nation are now as  
much and more aggrieved, that some, who were Parties to  
this Declaration, and others, who have made us many or  
more Declarations & Protections, as his Majesty ever did, do  
rule by the known Lawes of the Land; should since this, far ex-  
ceed his Majesty in the like, nay greater, more exorbitan-  
ces in the Militia, Excises, Taxes, Impositions, Imprison-  
ments

ments, arbitrary extravagant proceedings, capital executions in new erected Courts of Justice, and whole volumes of new binding Ordinances, as they term them, and their ill-sounding Instrument, obliging all our three Nations, both for the present & all future ages, in \* their intention,

\* See the true state of the case of the Commonwealth of England, &c. p. 33. as diametrically contrary as the Kings Commissions of Array, to the Fundamental Laws of the Land ( four times together so stiled and insisted on, as such, in this one Declaration of both Houses ) the Right of Property of the Subject, contrary to former Resolutions, and the Petition of Right; 34.

yea ( which is most abominable ) to their own Declarations, Remonstrances, Votes, Protestations, Vows, Solemn Leagues and Covenants in Parliament, to their own eternall Infamy, as well as the peoples intolerable oppression and slavery; who thereupon may justly conclude and protest against them, as both Houses did in the close of this Declaration against the Array, viz. \* And the Lords and

\* Exalt. Collect. p. 888. Commons do and shall adhere to their former Votes & Resolutions, That all those that are Actors in putting of this Commission of Array ( these Instruments, Ordinances new Taxes, Imposts, Excises ) in execution, shall be esteemed disturbers of the Peace of the Kingdome, and of the Properties and Liberties of the Subject.

10. The tenth Evidence is, \* the Vote and Letter of both Houses of Parliament sent to his Majesty at Oxford, 9. March 1643. In Answer to his Majesties, of the third of March; and wherein there is this passage: We the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of England, &c. Have resolved, with the concurrent advice and consent of the Commissioners of Scotland, to represent to your Majesty in all humility and plainness as followeth; That this present Parliament convened, according to the known and.

\* How have others of late ( which they file Parliament ) been convened ? \* FUNDAMENTAL LAWS OF THE KINGDOME ( the continuance whereof is established by a law consented to by your Majesty ) is in effect denied to be a Parliament, &c. And hereupon we

we think our selves bound to let your Majesty know; That since the \* continuance of this Parliament is settled by <sup>\* Yet forcibly dissolved by the</sup> a Law, (which as all other laws of your Kingdome, your Ma- Army, and some <sup>now in Power,</sup> jesty is sworn to maintain, as we are sworn to our Allegiance <sup>against their</sup> in duty, and accordingly are resolved, with our Lives and For- <sup>Commissioners,</sup> tunes, to Defend and preserve the just Rights and full Power of <sup>Oaths, Trusts,</sup> this Parliament.) To which the Earle of Essex (then Ge- <sup>Covenant, and</sup> neral) by both Houses order, in his Letter to the Earle of <sup>an Act of Par-</sup> Forth January 30. 1643. adds this Corolary. *My Lord, liament for the maine nance of the Parliament of England, and the Pri- vileges thereof, is that for which we are resolved to spend our blood, as being THE FOUNDATION WHEREON ALL OUR LAWS AND LIBERTIES ARE BUILT;* Which both the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, in their Declaration 23. March 1643. touching their proceedings upon his Maj: s Letter, concerning a Treaty of Peace, (wherein this Earls former letter is recited) thus second: *The Parliament of England is the only Basis, the chief Support and Pillar of our Laws and Liberties, &c. And if notwithstanding all these Obligations, the King shall at his pleasure dissolve this Parliament, the Kingdome is not only deprived of the present, but made incapable of enjoying the benefit of any future Parliament, or Law, any longer than shall stand with the will and pleasure of the King: and consequently THE FUNDAMENTALS OF ALL OUR LAWS AND GOVERNMENT ARE SUBVERTED.* Let the Parliament purging, securing, questing, dissolving Officers Army, and their Confederates, seriously ponder this, yea let all the whole English Nation and their Trustees who shall hereafter sit in Parliament, consider and reform it in the first place, if ever they expect any Freedome, free Parliaments, Peace, settlement, enjoyment of their Fundamental Laws, Rights, or Liberties for the future, depending on our Parliaments Freedome, and exemption from all force and violence on its Members.

\* A Collection  
of p. 504.

The eleventh is, the \* *Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament*, 13. Junii 1644. For the Forces raised in the County of Salop, which begins thus : \* The Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, taking into their serious considerations, the great Oppressions under which the Inhabitants of the County of Salop lie, by reason the insupportable Taxes, &c. and the present condition of the County, by reason of the great number of Irish Rebels that have invaded it, and joyned with Papists and other ill affected Persons, now in those parts, which threaten the extirpation of the Protestant Religion, and the subversion of the FUNDAMENTAL LAWS and GOVERNMENT OF THE KINGDOM. For prevention whereof, &c. A dire & Ordinance in point.

\* A Collection  
of c. p. 877,  
878, 879.

The twelfth is, \* *a Declaration of the Commons of England, assembled in Parliament*, 17. Aprilis 1646. Of their true intentions concerning the ANCIENT and FUNDAMENTAL GOVERNMENT OF THE KINGDOME, securing the people against ALL ARBITRARY GOVERNMENT, &c. wherein they complain, \* That the Enemy being in dispair to accomplish his Designes by War, do mis-represent our intentions in the use we intend to make of the great successes God hath given us, and the happy opportunity to settle Peace and Truth in the three Kingdome; to beget a beliefe that we now desire to exced, or swerve from our first Aym's and Principles in the undertaking of this War, and to recede from the Solemn League and Covenant, and Treaties between the two Kingdome; and that we would prolong these uncomfortable troubles, and bleeding distractiions, IN ORDER TO ALTER THE FUNDAMENTAL CONSTITUTION AND FRAME OF THIS KINGDOME, to leave all Government in the Church loose and unsettled, and ourselves to exercise THE SAME ARBITRARY POWER OVER THE PERSONS and ESTATES OF THE SUBJECTS, which this present Parliament hath thought fit to abolish, by taking away the Star-Chamber, High-Com-

\* And is not all this now proved a reall experimental truth, in some of these Remonstrants, to their shame?

Commission, and other arbitrary Courts, and the exorbitant Power of the Council Table, ( all which we have seen experimentally verified in every particular, in the highest degree, notwithstanding this Declaration, by some in late and present power, and new White-ball Council Tables, exceeding the old in illegal Taxes, Law-making, and other extravagances: ) *All which being seriously considered by us, &c.* We do declare, THAT OUR TRUE and REAL INTENTIONS ARE, and OUR ENDEAVOUR SHALL BE, to settle Religion in the purity thereof, \* TO MAINTAIN THE ANCIENT and FUNDAMENTAL GOVERNMENT OF THIS KINGDOME, <sup>\* And can more of these Remonstrants in late or present Po. ever, now say</sup> TO PRESERVE THE RIGHTS and LIBERTIES OF THE SUBJECT; to lay bold on the first opportunity of <sup>thu in trath or reality?</sup> procuring a safe and well grounded peace in the three Kingdoms, <sup>must not they be utterly affa-</sup> and to keep a good understanding between the two Kingdoms of <sup>med, confound-</sup> England and Scotland, according to the grounds expressed in <sup>ed, before God</sup> the Solemn League and Covenant: And lest these generals <sup>and man, when</sup> should not give a sufficient satisfaction, we have thought fit, to <sup>they consider</sup> the end men might no longer be abused in a misbelief of our intentions, or a misunderstanding of our actions, to make a further <sup>how they have dissembled, pre-varicated with</sup> enlargement upon the particulars.

And first, Concerning Church-Government, &c. because we cannot consent to the granting of an Arbitrary and unlicensed Power and Jurisdiction, to near ten thousand Judicatures to be erected within this Kingdome, and this demanded in such a way, as is not consistent with the FUNDAMENTAL LAWS and <sup>\* And can the new Modellers of our Govern-</sup> GOVERNMENT OF THE SAME, &c. Our full resolutions still are, sincerely, really and constantly to endeavour the Reformation of Religion in the Kingdome of England and Ireland, in Doctrine, Worship, and Government, according to the word of God, and the example of the best Reformed Churches, <sup>ment over and over, who were parties to this Declaration, & then Members of the Commons House, say so now? or read</sup> and according to the Covenant. WE ARE \* SO FARRE FROM ALTERING THE FUNDAMENTAL GOVERNMENT OF THIS KINGDOME BY KING, LORDS and COMMONS, that we have onely desired, that this without the consent of the King, such Power may be settled in the blushing and TWO HOUSES, without which we can have no assurance, self-abhorrence?

but that the like, or greater mischiefs than those which God hath  
hitherto delivered us from, may break out again, and engage us in  
a second and more destructive war; whereby it plainly appears,  
Our intentions are not to change the Antient Frame of  
Government within this Kingdome, but to obtain the end  
of the Primitive Institution of all Government, The safety  
and weal of the People; not judging it wise or safe, after so  
bitter experience of the bloody consequences of a \* pretended  
Power of the Militia in the King, to leave any colourable autho-  
rity in the same, for the future attempts of introducing AN  
**ARBITRARY GOVERNMENT OVER THIS NA-  
TION.** 'We do declare, That we will not, nor any by  
colour of any Authority derived from us, shall inter-  
rupt the \* ordinary course of Justice, in the severall  
Courts of Judicature of this Kingdome, nor inter-  
meddle in the cases of private interest other where de-  
terminable, unless it be in case of male-Administration of  
Justice; wherein we shall see and provide, that Right  
be done, and punishment inflicted, as there shall be oc-  
casion, **ACCORDING TO THE LAWS OF THE  
KINGDOME.**

Lastly, *Wheras both Nations have entered into a Solemn League and Covenant; we have, and EVER SHALL BE VERY CAREFULL DULY TO OBSERVE THE SAME: that as nothing hath been done, SO NOTHING SHALL BE DONE BY US REPUGNANT TO THE TRUE MEANING AND INTENTION THEREOF, &c. WHO WILL NOT DEPART FROM THOSE GROUNDS AND PRINCIPLES, upon which it was framed and founded.*

Though the generality of the (afterwards,) secured and secluded Majority of the House of Commons, endeavoured constantly to make good this Declaration in all partic-  
ulars; yet how desperately the garbled Minority thereof, continuing in power after their Seclusion, prevaricated, apostatized, and falsified their Faith herein in every par-  
ticle, in the highest degree, we cannot but with greatest  
grief of heart, and detestation remember, to the subversi-  
on.

on, ruine of our King, Lords, Commons, Kingdome, Parliaments, Fundamentall Laws, Government, and the peoples Liberties, &c. almost beyond all hopes of restitution or reparation in humane probability, without a miracle from heaven. The Lord give them grace most seriously to consider repent of, and really, sincerely reform it now at last, and to make it the principle subject of their prescribed publike Humiliations, Fasts and Lamentations, as God himself prescribes; Isa. 58.5,6,7,8. Jer. 34.8. to 22. Ezech. 19.1.14. Hos. 10.3,4. and not still to adde drunckenesse to thirst, lest they bring them to temporall and eternal condemnation for it in Gods own due time, and engender endless Wars, Troubles, Taxes, Changes, Confusions in our Kingdome, as they have hitherto done and will do till all be restored to their just Rights, Powers, Places, Possessions and Liberties.

<sup>\* Exalt Colet.</sup>

¶ 4. 12. 34. 61.

243. 260. 321.

500. 501.

<sup>\* See the hum-</sup>

ble Remon-

stance against

the illegall Tax

of Ship-money

with briefly discus-

sed. p. 2. &c.

Englands Birth

vigh & their

Treatises. The

Declaration of

Sir Thomas

Fairfax, and

the Army under

his Command,

tendered to the

Parliament,

June 14 1647.

concerning the

Juſt and Fun-

damental

Rights and Li-

berties of the

Kingdome.

100.

By this full Jury of Parliamentary Authorities, to omit many others, of like, or <sup>\*</sup>inferior nature, and leſſe moment, it is undeniable: That the people of England, have both an a Fundamental Government, which like the Laws of the Medes and Persians, neither may nor ought to be altered, or innovated upon any pretence, but perpetually maintained, defended, with greatest care, vigilancy, resolution; and he who shall deny or oppugn it, defers no refutation by further arguments, since it is a received Maxime in all Arts, Contra Principia magna non est disputandum; but rather demerits a sentence of Condemnation and publike execution at Tyburn, as a Common Enemy, Traitor to our Laws, Liberties, Nation; it being no leſſe than a transcendent crime, and High Treason by our Laws, for any person or persons, secretly or openly, to attempt the undermining or subversion of our fundamental laws, rights, Liberties, Government, especially by fraud, treachery, force or armed power and violence (the later part of my first proposal) which I shall now confirm by these twelve following Presidents and Evidences, corroborating likewise the former part, That we have ſuch Fundamental laws, liberties, rights, franchises, and a fundamental Government 100.

\*Walsingham, In the\* fifth year of King Richard the second, the vulgar  
 slow, Holinshed rabble of people and villains, in Kent, Essex, Sussex, Norfolk,  
 speed Grafton, Cambridge-shire and other Counties, under the Conduct of  
 Trussell, Wat Tyler, Jack Straw and other Rebels, assembling toge-  
 ther in great multitudes ( occasioned at first by the new  
 Survey of Lon- invented Tax of Poll-money, granted by Parliament, and  
 don p.89.10101 the over-rigorous levying thereof, on the people, by the  
 Mr. St. Johns Kings Officers ( though nothing so grievous as our Ex-  
 Argument at- fuses, Contributions, & new Imposts now, so long exacted  
 Law, at Strat- without any legal Grant in true, free and full English  
 fords Attainder Parlaments ) resolved by force and violence, to abrogate the  
 p.14. law of Villenage, with all other laws they disliked, formerly set-  
 tled; to burn all the Records, kill and behead all the Judges, Ju-  
 stices, and men of law of all sorts, which they could get into their  
 hands; to burn and destroy the Inns of Court, ( as they did then  
 the new Temple, where the Apprentices of the law lodged, burn-  
 ing their Monuments and Records of Law there found ) to alter  
 the tenures of lands, to devise new laws of their own, by which  
 the Subjects should be governed: to change the ancient Heredi-  
 tary Monarchicall Government of the Realm, and to erect petty  
 elective Tyrannies and Kingdomes to themselves in every shire:  
 (A project eagerly prosecuted by some Anarchicall Ana-  
 baptists, Jesuits, Levellers, very lately ) and though withall  
 they intended to destroy the King at last, and all the Nobles too,  
 when they had gotten sufficient power; yet at first to cloak  
 their intentions from the people, they took an Oath of  
 all they met; - *Quod Regi & Communibus fidelitatem ser-  
 rent; that they should keep Allegiance and Faith to the  
 King & Commons: Yea, Wat Tyler demanded a Com-  
 mission from the King, to behead all Lawyers, Escheatiers, and  
 others whatsoever that were learned in the laws, or com-  
 muni- cated with the law by reason of their Office, conceiving in  
 his minde, that this being brought to passe, all things after-  
 wards would be ordered according to his own and the common-  
 peoples fancy. And he made his vaunt, putting his hand to  
 his own lips; *That before score dayes came to an end, ALL  
 THE LAWS OF ENGLAND SHOULD PROCEED  
 FROM HIS MOUTH.* ( Which some of late times  
 seem.*

seem to speak not only in words, but deeds, by their manifold new laws and Edicts, repealing or contradicting our old.) This their resolution and attempt thus to alter and *subvert the Laws and Government*, upon full debate in the Parliament of 5. R. 2. n. 30. 31. was declared to be High-Treason against the King and the Law, for which divers of the chief Actors in this *Treasonable Designe*, were condemned and executed, as Traitors, in severall places; and the rest enforced to a publike submission, & then pardoned. Let these imitators now remember this old President.

2. In the \* Parliament of 11. R. 2. (as appears by the Parliament Rols and printed Statutes at large) three Privy Councillours, the Archbisop of York, the Duke of Ireland, and the Earl of Suffolk, the Bisop of Exeter, the Kings Confessor, five Knights, fix Judges (whereof Sir Robert Treylilian Chief Justice was one) Blake, of the Kings Council at Law, Usk, and others, were impeached and condemned of High Treason, some of them execued as Traitors, the rest banished, their lands and goods forfeited, and none to endeavour to procure their pardon, under pain of Felony; for their endeavouring to overthrow a Commission for the good of the Kingdome, contrary to an Act of Parliament, by force of Arms, and opinions in Law delivered by these temporizing Judges and Lawyers, to the King, (through threats and terroure at Nottingham Castle) tending to subvert the Laws and Statutes of the Realm, overthowre the Power, Priviledges and proceedings of Parliament, and betray (not \*all the House of Lords, but only) some of the Lords of Parliament. Which Judgement being afterwards re-versed in the forced and packed Parliament of 21. R. 2. was done. reconfirmed in the Parliament of 1. H. 4. c. 3, 4, 5. and the Parliament of 21. R. 2. totally repealed, and annulled for ever, and hath so continued. Read Statut. at large.

3. In the \* Parliament of 17 R. 2. n. 20. and Pas. 17 R. 2. B. Regis Rot. 16. Sir Thomas Talbot was accused and found guilty of High Treason, for conspiring the death of the Law, at Stratford. Dukes of Glocester, Lancaster, and other Peers, who maintained the Commission confirmed by Act of Parliament, 10. R. 2. der. p. 13, 14, 17.

and assembling people in a warlike manner in the County of Chester, for effecting of it, in destruction of the estates of the Realm; and the Laws of the Kingdome.

<sup>\* Hall, Fabian, Holinshed, Speed, Grafton, Purveyances and Extortions importable to the Commons, where- Stow, Martin, Baker.</sup> 4. In the <sup>\*</sup> 29. year of King Henry the sixth, Jack Cade, under a pretence to REFORM, alter and abrogate some laws, great multitude of Kentish people to Black-beath, in a warlike manner, to effect it: In the Parliament of 29 H.6.c.1 this was adjudged High Treason in him and his Complices, by Act of Parliament: and the Parliament of 31. H.6. c. 1. made this memorable Act against him, and his Imitators in succeeding ages; worthy serious perusal and consideration by all, who tread in his footsteps, and over- act him in his Treasons.

<sup>\* Whereas the most abominable Tyrant, horrible, odious, and errant FALSE TRAITOR, John Cade, calling himself sometimes Mortimer, sometime Captain of Kent, (whicb Name, Fame, Acts and Feats, be to be removed out of the speech and minde of every faithfull Christian man perpetually) fally and traiterously purposing and imagining the perpetuall destruction of the KING'S PERSON and FINAL SUBVERSION OF THIS REALM, taking upon him \* ROYALL POWER, and gathering to him the Kings People in great number, BY FALSE SUBTIL, IMAGINED LANGUAGE: and seditiously made a stirring Rebellion, and insurrection, UNDER COLOUR OF JUSTICE, FOR REFORMATION OF THE LAWS OF THE SAID KING, robbing, slaying, spoiling a great part of his faithfull people: Our said Sovereign Lord the King, considering the miseries, with many other, which were more odious to remember, by advice and assent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and at THE REQUEST OF THE COMMONS, and by Authority aforesaid, Hatt ordain-ed and established, that the said John Cade shall be had, named and declared, A FALSE TRAITOR, to our said Sovereign Lord the King; and that all his Tyranny, Acts, Feats, & false Opinions, shall be voided, abated, aduallied, destroyed, and put out of</sup>

<sup>\*</sup> And have not others of late assumed to themselves more Royal power than he? resolved to be Treason by 21. & 3. Rot. Parl. & Cooks 3. Institus p 9.

of remembrance for ever. And that all Indictments, and things depending thereof, had and made under the power of Tyranny, shall likewise be void, annulled, abated, repealed, and holden for none: and that the blood of none of them be defiled, nor corrupted, but by the Authority of the said Parliament clearly declared for ever. And that all Indictments in time coming, in like case, under power of Tyranny, Rebellion and stirring had, shall be of no regard or effect, but void in Law: And all the Petitions \* delivered to the said King in his last Parliament holden at Westminster, the sixth day of November the 29. of his Reign, against his minde, by him not agreed, shall be taken and put in Oblivion, out of Remembrance, undone, voided, annulled and destroyed for ever, as a thing purposed against God and his Conscience, and against his Royal estate and preheminence, and also DISHONORABLE and UNREASONABLE.

\* To wit by  
Cade and his  
Confederates  
for the altera-  
tion of the laws

\* See Mr. St.  
Johns argu-  
ment against  
Strafford, p.  
17. Halls  
Chronicle and  
Holmshed.

\* Cooke 3. Insti-  
tutes p. 9, 10.

5. In the \* 8 year of King Henry the 8. William Bell, and Thomas Lacy, in the County of Kent, conspired with Thomas Cheney (the Hermite of the Queen of Fairies) TO OVERTHROW THE LAWS AND CUSTOMS OF THE REALM: for effecting whereof, they with 200 more met together, and concluded upon a course of raising greater forces in Kent, and the adjacent Shires; This was judged High Treason, and some of them executed as Traitors. Moreover, it \* was resolved by all the Judges of England, in the reign of Henry 8. that an Insurrection against the Statute of Laborers, or for the inbansing of Salaries and wages, or against any Statute, or to remove Councillors, or to any other end pretending Reformation of their own heads, was TREASON, and a levying war against the King, BECAUSE IT WAS GENERALLY AGAINST THE KINGS LAW, and the Offenders took upon them THE REFORMATION THEREOF, which Subjects by gathering of power ought not to do.

6. On \* December 1. In the 21. year of King Henry the 8. Sr. Thomas Moore, Lord Chancellour of England; with fourteen more Lords of the Privy Council, John Fitz-  
James, Chief Justice of England, and Sir Anbony Fitz-  
Herbert,

\* Cooke 4. Insti-  
tutes c. 8. p. 89.  
209.

Herbert, one of the Judges of the Common Pleas, exhibited sundry Articles of Impeachment to King Henry the 8. against Cardinal Wolsey: *That he had by divers and many sundry mayes and fashions, committed High Treason, and NOTABLE GRIEVOUS OFFENCES, by misusing altering and subverting of his Graces Laws, and otherwise, contrary to his high Honour, Prerogative, Crown, Estate, and Dignity Royal; to the inestimable great hinderance, diminution and decay of the universal wealth of this his Graces Realm.* The Articles are 43. in number, the 20, 21, 26, 30, 35, 37:42, 43. contain, *his illegal arbitrary practises and proceedings to the subversion of the due course and order of his Graces Laws, to the undoing of a great number of his loving people.* Whereupon they pray. *Please therefore your most excellent Majesty of your excellent goodnessse towards the Weal of this your Realm, and subiects of the same, to set such order and direction upon the said Lord Cardinal, as may be to terrible example of other, to beware to offend your Grace, and your Laws hereafter: and that he be so provided for, that he never have any Power, Jurisdiction or authority hereafter, to trouble, vex or impoverish the common wealth of this your Realm, as he hath done before, to the great burth and dammage of every man almost, high and low.* His <sup>\*</sup> poisoning himself prevented his legal judgement for these his Practises.

<sup>\*</sup> See Speed, Hollinshed, Grafton, Stow, Antiquities Ecclesiast Brit. p. 378. & 379. and Godwin in his life.

7. The Statute of 3. and 4. Ed. c. 5, 6. enacts, That if any persons, to the number of twelve or more, being assembled together, shall intend, go about, practise or put in use with force and arms, unlawfully of their own authority, TO CHANGE ANY LAWS made for Religion, by authority of Parliament, OR ANY OTHER LAWS OR STATUTES OF THIS REALM, STANDING IN FORCE, OR ANY OF THEM; and shall continue together by the space of an houre, being commanded by a Justice of Peace, Mayor, Sheriffe, or other Officer to return: or shall by ringing of any Bell, sounding of any Trumpet, Drumme, Horn, &c. raise such a number of persons, to the intent to put any the things aforesaid in ure, IT SHALL BE HIGH TREASON, and the parties executed as Traitors: After this

ith the Statute of 1. Marie. c. 12. Enacted, That if twelve <sup>Mr. St. Johns</sup> or more in manner aforesaid, shall endeavour by force to alter <sup>Argument a-</sup> any of the Laws or Statutes of the Kingdome; the offenders <sup>against Strafford</sup> shall from the time therein limited, be adjudged <sup>p. 14, 15.</sup> ONLY AS <sup>Law against</sup> PELONS, whereas it was Treason before: but this Act continuing but till the next Parliament, and then expi-<sup>Strafford, p. 15,</sup> the offence remains Treason, as formerly.

8. In the <sup>Cook's 3. Inst.</sup> 39. year of Queen Elizabeth, divers in the County of Oxford consulted together to go from house to <sup>1. 1. p. 9, 10.</sup> house in that County, and from thence to London and other <sup>Mr. St. Johns</sup> parts, to noise them to take arms for the abroewing down of inclosures throughout the Realm; nothing more was prosecuted, nor assemblies made; yet in Easter Term 39. Eli-<sup>Argum. at</sup> zabeth, it was resolved by all the Judges of England (who <sup>Law against</sup> met about the Case) that this was High Treason, and a levy-<sup>Strafford, p. 15,</sup> ing war against the Queen, because it was to throw down all inclosures throughout the Kingdom, to which they could pretend no right: and that the end of it was, TO OVERTHROW THE LAWS AND STATUTES for inclosures. Whereupon BRADSHAW and BURTON (two of the principal Offenders) were condemned and executed at Ainstow Hill in Oxfordshire, where they intended their first meet-<sup>16.</sup> ing.

9. To come nearer to our present times and case: In the last Parliament of King Charles, Anno 1640. <sup>\* See the Jour-</sup> The whole House of Commons impeached Thomas Earl of Strafford, Lord Deputy of Ireland, of High Treason; amongst o-<sup>nals of both</sup> ther Articles, for this Crime especially (wherein all the other centred) That he bath TREASONABLY ENDEA-<sup>House, & All</sup> Voured by his Words, Actions and Counsels, TO SUB-<sup>for his Atta-</sup> VERT THE FUNDAMENTALL LAWS and GO-<sup>inder. Mr. Pym's</sup> VERNMENT OF ENGLAND and IRELAND, and <sup>Declaration</sup> introduce an arbitrary and Tyrannical Government. This the <sup>upon the whole</sup> whole Parliament declared and adjudged to be High <sup>Charge of High</sup> Treason, in and by their Votes, and a special Act of Parliament <sup>Treason, a-</sup> for his Attainder; for which he was condemned, and soon <sup>gainst him, A-</sup> after executed on Tower-Hill, <sup>prill 13. 1641.</sup> as a Traitor to the King <sup>Mr. St. Johns</sup> and Kingdom, May 22. 1641. <sup>Mr. St. Johns</sup> argument at law, at his At-<sup>tainder, and</sup> Diurnal Occu-<sup>rences.</sup>

10. The whole House of Commons the same Parliament, impeached \* *William Laud* Arch-bishop of Canterbury, of HIGH TREASON; in these very terms, February 6, 1640.

printed im-  
peachment, &c. First, That he hath traiterously endeavoured to sub-  
Pym's Speech vert the Fundamental Laws and Government of this  
thereat, Canter- Kingdome of *England*, and instead thereof, to introduce  
buries Doom p. an arbitrary and tyrannical Government against Law :  
25, 26, 27, 38, <sup>1641.</sup> And he to that end hath wickedly and **TRAITEROUS**  
40.

See Chap. 2. <sup>1.</sup> LY advised his Majesty, that he <sup>2.</sup> might at his own will and  
Preposition 1. <sup>3.</sup> pleasure, levy and take mony of his Subjects without THEIR  
" Do not others <sup>4.</sup> now do it, who <sup>5.</sup> CONSENT IN PARLIAMENT; and this he affirmed  
impeached and <sup>6.</sup> was warrantable by the law of God.

Secondly, *He bath for the better accomplishment of that his Traiterous Designe, advised and procured Sermons and other Discourses, to be preached, printed and published; in which the Authority of Parliament, and the force of the Laws of this Kingdome have been denied, and absolute and unlimited Power over the Persons and Estates of his Majesties Subjects maintained and defended, not only in the King, but in himself and other Bishops, against the Law.*

27, 28, 29, 30.  
31, 32, 33, 34,  
37, 38, 39, 40.  
42, of our New  
Government,  
and those that  
compiled and  
prescribed it to  
the 3 Kingdoms.  
Thirdly, *He bath by Letters, Messages, Threats and Pro-  
mises, and by divers other wayes to Judges, and other Minis-  
ters of Justice, interrupted, perverted, and at other times by  
means aforesaid bath endeavoured to interrupt and pervert the  
course of Justice in his Majesties Courts at Westminster and  
other Courts, TO THE SUBVERSION OF THE  
LAWS OF THIS KINGDOME, whereby sundry of  
his Majesties Subjects have been stopt in their just suits,  
deprived of their lawfull Rights, and subjected to his  
Tyrannicall will, to their ruine and destruction.*

Fourthly, 'That he hath traiterously endeavoured to corrupt the other Courts of Justice, by advising and procuring his Majesty to sell places of Judicature and other Offices, CONTRARY TO THE LAWS and CUSTOMES in that behalf.

¶ Fifthly, That he hath TRAITEROUSLY caused a  
Book of *Canons* to be compiled and published, with-  
out

out any lawfull warrant and Authority in that behalf; \* Are there not  
in which pretended Canons \* many matters are contained, more such mat-  
ter contrary to the Kings Prerogative, to the Fundamental Laws ters contained  
and Statutes of this Realm, to the Rights of Parliament, to in the new  
the Property and Liberty of the Subject, and matters tending Instrument of  
Sedition, and of dangerous consequence, and to the establish Government  
ing of a vast, unlawfull presumptuous power in himself and his  
successors, &c.

Seventhly, That he hath traiterously endeavoured  
to alter and subvert Gods true Religion BY LAW ESTA-  
BLISHED; and instead thereof to set up Popish Reli-  
gion and Idolatry: And to that end hath declared, and  
maintained in Speeches and printed Books, diverse Po-  
popish Doctrines and Opinions, contrary to the Articles  
of Religion ESTABLISHED BY LAW. He hath urged  
and enjoyned divers Popish and Superstitious Ceremo-  
nies WITHOUT ANY WARRANT OF LAW; and  
hath cruelly persecuted those who have opposed the  
same, by corporal punishment, and imprisonments,  
and most unjustly vexed others, who refused to con-  
form thereto by Ecclesiastical Censures, Excommu-  
nication, Suspension, \* Deprivation, and Degradation, \* Have not an-  
CONTRARY TO THE LAWS of this kingdome. bity Commiss-  
ees in most  
places done the  
like, or worse,  
in many cases?

Thirteenth, He did by his own authority and power  
contrary \* to Law, procure sundry of his Majesties Sub-  
jects, and enforced the Clergy of this Kingdome to con-  
tribute towards the maintenance of the War against the  
Scots.

That to preserve himself from being questioned, for  
these & other his Traiterous courses, he hath laboured  
to subvert the Rights of Parliament, and the ancient course of  
Parliamentary proceedings, (and have not the Army Offi-  
cers and others actually done it since upon the same  
accownt?) and by false and malicious flanders to in-  
cense his Majesty against Parliaments.

All which being proved against him at his Triall,  
were after solemn Argument by Mr. Samuel Brown, in  
behalf of the Commons House, proved; and soon  
after

after adjudged, to be High Treason at the Common Law, by both Houses of Parliament; and so declared in the Ordinance for his Attainer: for which he was condemned and beheaded as a Traitor, against the King, Law and Kingdom, on Tower Hill, January 10. 1644.

\* See the Commons and Lords Journals, Durnal Occurrences, p. 15, 16 11. In the \* same Parliament, December 21. Jan. 14. 1640. and Febr. 11. 1640. and July 6. 1641. Sir John Finch, then Lord Keeper, Chief Justice Bramston, Judge Berkley, Judge Crawly, Chief Baron Davenport, Baron Weston, and Baron of both Houses Trevor, were accused and impeached by the House of Commons, by several Articles transmitted to the Lords, OF HIGH TREASON, for that they had Traitorously and wickedly endeavoured, to subvert the Fundamental Laws and established Government of the Realm of ENGLAND; and instead therof to introduce an Arbitrary and Tyrannical Government against Law; which they had declared, by traitorous and wicked words, opinions, judgements; and more especially in this their extra-judicial opinion, subscribed by them in the case of Ship-money, viz. We are of opinion, that when the good and safety of the Kingdome in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdome in danger; your Majesty may by Writ, under the Great Seal of England ( without consent in Parliament ) command all your Subjects of this your Kingdome, at their charge to provide and furnish such a number of Ships, with Men, Victuals and Ammunition, and for such time as your Majesty shall think fit for the Defence and safeguard of the Kingdome, from such danger and perill. And we are of Opinion, that in such case, your Majesty is the \* sole Judge both of the danger, and when, and how, the same is to be prevented, and avoided. And likewise for arguing and giving judgment accordingly, in Mr. John Hampden's case, in the Exchequer Chamber, in the point of Ship-money, in April 1638: which said opinions, are Destructive to the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, the Subjects Right of Property, and contrary to former Resolutions in Parliament, and the Petition of Right; as the words of their severall Impeachments tended dangers run. Sir John Finch fled the Realm, to preserve his head on his shoulders; some others of them died through fear, to prevent the danger, soon after their Impeachments, and the

\* Now others presume to do it without iris or consulting with the judges to be condemned in them.

See c.2 Proposotion 1.

\* Have not others been sole Judges of it, and other pretended dangers run. Sir John Finch fled the Realm, to preserve his head on his shoulders; some others of them died through fear, to prevent the danger, soon after their Impeachments, and the

the rest who were lesse peccant, were put to Fines.

12. Mr. John Pym, in his Declaration upon the whole matter of the charge of High Treason against Thomas Earl of Strafford, Aprill 12. 1641. before a Committee of both Houses of Parliament in Westminster Hall; printed and published by Order of the House of Commons; proves his endeavour to subvert the Fundamental Laws of England, and to introduce an Arbitrary Power; to be High Treason, and an offence very hainous in the nature, and mischievous in the effects thereof; which (faith he) will best appear, if it be examined by that universall and supremest Law, *Salus Populi*: the element of all Laws, out of which they are derived: the end of all Laws, to which they are designed, and in which they are perfected.

1. 'It is an offence comprehending all other Offences. Here you shall finde several Treasons, Murthers, Ra-  
pines, Oppressions, Persecuies. There is in this Crime, a  
Seminary of all evils, hurtfull to a State; and if you  
consider the Reasons of it, it must needs be so. The  
Law, is that which putteth a difference betwixt good and  
evill; betwixt just and unjust. If you take away the  
law, all things will fall into confusion; every man will  
become a law to himself, which in the depraved con- Note.  
dition of humane nature, must needs produce many  
great enormities; Lust will become a Law; and En-  
vy will become a law; Covetousness and Ambition  
will become laws; and what Dictates, what decisions  
such laws will produce, may easily be discerned in the  
late Government of Ireland (and England too since this.)  
The law bath a power to prevent, to restrain, to repel  
evils: without this all kindes of mischiefs and dissem-  
ples will break in upon a State. It is the Law that in-  
taketh the King to the Allegiance and Service of his peo-  
ple: it intaketh the People to the Protection and Ju-  
stice of the King, &c. The Law is the Boundary, the measure  
betwixt the Kings Prerogative, and the Peoples Libertie;  
whiles these move in their Orbe, they are a support and security  
one another; but if these Bounds be so removed, that they

\* And are they  
not so now?

' enter into contestation and conflict, one of these great  
 ' mischiefs must needs ensue: if the Prerogative of the King o-  
 ' verwhelm the Liberty of the people, it will be turned into Ty-  
 ' ranny; If Liberty undermine the Prerogative, it will turn in-  
 ' to Anarchy. The Law is the safeguard, the custody of all  
 ' private interests: your Honours, your Lives, your Liberties,  
 ' and your estates, are all in the keeping of the Law: without  
 ' this, every man hath a like Right to any thing: and this is  
 ' the condition into which the Irish were brought by the Earl of  
 ' Strafford; (and the English by others who condemned  
 ' him) And the reason which he gave for it, hath more  
 ' mischief than the thing it self: THEY ARE A CON-  
 ' QUERED NATION, (let those who now say the  
 ' same of England, as well as Scotland and Ireland, confi-  
 ' der and observe what followes) There cannot be a word  
 ' more pregnant and fruitfull IN TREASON, than that word is.  
 There are few Nations in the world, that have not been con-  
 ' quered, and no doubt but the conquerour may give \*what Laws he  
 ' please to those that are conquered. But if the succeeding Parli-  
 ' aments and Agreements do not limit and restrain that right, what people  
 ' can be secure? England hath been conquered, and Wales hath  
 ' been conquered, and by this reason will be in little better case  
 ' than Ireland. If the King by the Right of a Conquerour give  
 ' Laws to his people, shall not the people by the same reason be  
 ' restored to the Right of the conquered, to recover their Li-  
 ' berty if they can? What can be more hurtful, more per-  
 ' nicious, than such Propositions as these?

\* And did not  
 some at White-  
 Hall  
 do so of late,  
 and now too  
 witness their  
 volumes of  
 new Declara-  
 ons, Edicts, Or-  
 dinances where  
 made.

\* Have not o-  
 ' thers taken up  
 such Principles  
 in their practi-  
 ses, proceedings  
 even against  
 Kings  
 Kingdoms,  
 Parliament,  
 Peers, as well  
 as private per-  
 sons?

2. It is dangerous to the Kings Person: and dangerous  
 to his Crown: it is apt to cherish ambition, usurpation,  
 and oppression in great men: and to beget sedition, di-  
 ' content in the people, and both these have been, and in  
 ' reason must ever be great causes of trouble and altera-  
 ' tions to Prince and State. If the Histories of those Ea-  
 ' stern Countries be perused, where Princes order their  
 ' affairs, according to the \*mischievous Principles of  
 ' the Earl of Strafford, Loose and absolved from all Rules of  
 ' Government, they will be found to be frequent in com-  
 ' bustions, full of Massacres, and the tragical end of Prin-  
 ' cesses

ces. If any man shall look into our own Stories, in the times when the Laws were most neglected, he shall finde them full of Commotions, of Civill distempers, whereby the Kings, that then raigned, were alwaies kept in want and distresse, the people consumed with CIVIL WARS: and by such wicked Counsels as these, some of our Princes have been brought to such miserable ends, As \* no honest heart can remember without horrour and earnest Prayer, that it may never be so again.

Notes.

\* Note this, all the whole Commons-House o-

pinion then.

3. As it is dangerous to the Kings Person and Crown, so it is in other respects very prejudicall to his Majesty, in honour, profit and greatnesse which he there proves at large, as you may there read at leisure) and yet these are the Guldings and Paintings, that are put up on such Counsels: These are for your Honour, for your Service.

4. It is inconsistent with the Peace, the Wealth, the Prosperity of a Nation. It is destructive to Justice, the mother of Peace: to Industry, the spring of Wealth; to Valour, which is the active vertue whereby the Prosperity of a Nation can onely be procured, confirmed, and enlarged. It is not onely apt to take away Peace, and so intangle the Nation with Wars, but doth corrupt Peace, and pours such a Malignity into it, as produceth the effects of Warre: both to the \* NOBILITY \* ts not their experimental truth now? and others, having as little security of THEIR PERSONS OR ESTATES, in this peaceable time, as if the Kingdome had been under the fury and rage of Warre. And as for industry and valour, who will take pains for that, which when he hath gotten is not his own? or who fights for that wherein he hath no other interest, but such as is subject to the will of another? &c. Shall it be Treason to embase the Kings Coyne; though but a piece of twelve pence or six pence, and must it not needs be the effect of greater Treason to \* embase the spirits of his Subjects, and to set a stamp and character of Servitude upon them, whereby they shall be disabled to do any thing for the service of the King or Commonwealth?

\* And were they ever so base, cowardly, & vile as now?

g. In

5. 'In times of sudden danger, by the Invasion of an Enemy, it will disable his Majesty to preserve himself, and his Subjects from that danger. When war threatens a Kingdome, by the coming of a Forraigh Enemy, it is no time then to discontent the people, to make them weary of the PRESENT GOVERNMENT, and more inclinable to a change. The supplies which are to come in this way, will be unready, uncertain; there can be no assurance of them, no dependance upon them, either for time or proportion. And if some money be gotten in such a way, the distractions, the divisions, distempers, which this course is apt to produce, will be more prejudicial to the publike safety, than the supply can be advantagious to it.

6. 'This crime is contrary to the Pact and Covenant between the King and his People; by mutuall agreement and stipulation, confirmed by OATH on both sides.

7. 'It is an Offence that is contrary to the ends of Government.

• Was ever their power, violence so unlimited, unbounded in all kinds of hindrance against

1. 'To prevent Oppressions; to \* limit and restrain the excessive power and violence of great men; to open passages of Justice with indifferency towards all.

2. 'To preserve men in their Estates, to secure them in their Lives and Liberties.

King, Kingdom, Parliaments, Peers, People?

• Is it not most true of late and true of late and Bill?

3. 'That Virtue should be cherisched, and Vice suppressed; but where Laws are subverted, and Arbitrary, and unlimited power set up; a way is open not onely for the security, (as now of all creatures,) but for the advancement and encouragement of evil. Such men as are \* aptest for the execution and maintenance of this power, are onely capable of preferment; and others, who will not be Instruments of any unjust Commands, who make Conscience to do any thing against the law of the Kingdome, and liberties of the Subject, are not onely not passable for employment, but SUBJECT TO MUCH JEALOUSIE and DANGER. (Is not this their condition of late and present times, even in Parliament Members themselves, as well as others, secured, secluded, kept close prisoners perforce, for making Conscience of doing nothing against the

the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, and their Oaths and Covenants too? and refusing to comply with usurping Innovators in all their self-seeking extravagancies and Treasons? *expertus loquor.*)

4. *That all accidents and events, all Counsels and Desigues should be improved for the publique good. But this arbitrary power is apt to dispose all to the maintenance of it self. (And is it not so now?)*

8. *The Treasons of subversion of the laws, violation of Liberties can never be good or justifiable by any circumstance or occasion, being in their own nature, how specious or good soever they be pretended. He alledged it was a time of GREAT NECESSITY and DANGER, when such Counsels were necessary, FOR THE PRESERVATION OF THE STATE; (the Plea since, and now used by others, who condemned him;) If there were any NECESSITY IT WAS OF HIS OWN MAKING. He by his evill Counsell had brought the King (as others the Kingdome since) into a Necessity; and by no rules of Justice can be allowed to gain this advantage to his Justification; which is A GREAT PART OF HIS OFFENCE.*

9. *As this is Treason in the nature of it, so it doth exceed all other Treasons in this; that in the Designe and endeavour of the Authour, it was to be A CONSTANT and PERMANENT TREASON; a standing perpetual Treason; which would have been in continual Act, not determined within one time or age, but transmitted to Posterity, even from Generation to Generation. And are not others Treasons of late times such, proclaimed such, in and by their own Printed papers; and therein exceeding Strafford's?*

10. *As it is odious in the nature of it, so it is odious in the Judgement and estimation of the Law. TO ALTER THE SETLED FRAME and CONSTITUTION OF GOVERNMENT, IS TREASON IN ANY ESTATE. (Let those consider it who are guilty of it in the highest degree, beyond Strafford, Canterbury, or the Shropshire-Judges in our own State.) The Laws*

\* See Article 3,  
2,3,4,5,10,11,  
12,13,16,21,  
22,24,25,26,  
27,28,29,30,  
31,32,33,39 &  
p.45,46. of the  
Government of  
the Common-  
wealth of Eng-  
land, &c.

\* Doth not the  
Declaration of  
17 March 1648  
and the Instru-  
ments of the  
new Govern-  
ment do it, in  
the highest de-  
gree?

whereby all parts of a Kingdome are preserved, should be very vain and defective, if they had not a power to secure and preserve themselves.

The Forfeitures inflicted for *Treason* by our Law, are of Life, Honour, and Estate, even all that can be forfeited: and this Prisoner, although he should \*pay all these Forfeitures, will still be a Debtor to the *Common-wealth*; Nothing can be more equal, than that he should perish by the Justice of the Law, which he would have subverted: neither will this be a New way of blood. There are marks enough to trace this Law to the very Original of this Kingdome. And if it hath not been put in execution, as he alledgedeth, this two hundred and forty years; it was not for want of *Law*, but that all that time had not bred a man \*bold enough to commit such Crimes as these: which is a circumstance much aggravating his Offence, and making him no lesse liable to punishment: he is THE \* ONLY MAN, that in so long a time hath ventured UPON SUCH A TREASON AS THIS.

Since he hath many followers. Thus far Mr. John Pym; in the Name and by the Order and Authority of the whole *Commons House in Parliament*: which I wish all those, who by their *Words, Admons Counsels* ( and printed *Publications* too ) have traiterously endeavoured to subvert the *Fundamentall Laws, Liberties, Government, Parliaments of England and Ireland*, and to introduce an *Arbitrary and Tyrannical Government* against law, as much as ever Strafford did, yea, far out stripped him therein ( even since his execution ) in all particulars, for which he was beheaded; would now seriously lay to heart, and speedily reform, lest they equal or exceed him in conclusion in *capital punishments* for the same, or endlesse *Hellish Torments*.

13. The next Authority I shall produce in point, is, The Speech and Declaration of Master Oliver St. John, at a Conference of both *Houses of Parliament*, concerning *S H I P M O N E T*, upon Judge *Fincbes Impeachment of High Treason*, January 14, 1640. printed by the *Commons*.

mons Order, London, 1641. wherein he thus declares the sense  
of the Commons, p. 12. &c.

That by the Judges opinions (\*forecited) concerning Ship-<sup>\*P. 36.</sup>  
mony, THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWS OF THE  
REALM CONCERNING OUR PROPERTIES  
and OUR PERSONS ARE SHAKEN: whose Tre-  
sonable Offence herein, he thus aggravates, page 20. &c.  
The Judges, as is declared in the Parliament of 11 R. 2.  
are the Executors of the Statutes, and of the Judgments and  
Ordinances of Parliament. They have made themselves the  
EXECUTIONERS OF THEM; they have in-  
devoured the DESTRUCTION OF THE FUNDAMENTALS OF OUR LAWS and LIBERTIES.

Holland in the Low Countries, lies under the Sea:  
the superficies of the Land, is lower than the  
superficies of the Sea. It is Capitall therefore for any  
man to cut the Banks, because they defend the Coun-  
try: Besides our own, even Forraign Authors, as  
Comines, observes, That the Statute DE TALLAGIO,  
and the other Old Laws, are the Sea Walls and Banks,  
which keep the Commons from the inundation of the  
Prerogative.

<sup>\* Have none  
done so since  
them?</sup>

*See Chap. 2.  
Proposition. 1.*

These \* Pioners have not only undermined these banks, \* Have not other Pioners  
but have levelled them even with the ground. If one and Judases  
that was known to be Hostis Patrie, had done this, done the like?  
though the Dammage be the same, yet the Guilt is less;  
but the Conservatores Riparum, the Overseers intrusted  
with the Defence of these Banks, for them to destroy  
them; the breach of Trust aggravates, nay, alters the  
nature of the offence: Breach of Trust, though in a pri-  
vate Person, and in the least things, is odious amongst  
all men: much more in a publike Person, in things  
of great and publike concernment, because \*GREAT  
TRUST BINDES THE PARTY TRUSTED  
TO GREATEST CARE AND FIDELI-  
TY.

<sup>\* This is grown  
a mere Paradox  
of late years, in  
Judges, soldiers  
& others</sup>

\* It is TREASON in the Constable of Dover Castle  
 to deliver the Keys to the known enemies of the King.  
 dome: Whereas if the House-keeper of a private per-  
 son, deliver possession to his Adversary, it is a crime  
 scarce punishable by Law. The\* Judges under his Ma-  
 jesty, are the Persons trusted with the Laws, and in  
 them with the Lives, Liberties and Estates of the whole  
 Kingdome. This Trust of all we have, is primarily from  
 his Majesty, and \* from him delegated to the Judges.  
 His Majesty at his Coronation, is bound by his Oath TO  
 EXECUTE JUSTICE TO HIS PEOPLE ACCORD-  
 ING TO THE LAWES; thereby to assure the  
 People of the faithfull performance of his GREAT  
 TRUST: His Majesty again, as he trusts the Judges  
 with the performance of this part of his Oath; so doth  
 he likewise exact another Oath of them, for their due  
 execution of Justice to the people, according to the  
 Laws: hereby the Judges stand intrusted with this part  
 of his Majesties Oath. If therefore the Judges shall doe  
 willingly against the Law, they doe not onely break  
 their own Oaths, and therein the Common Faith and Trust  
 of the whole Kingdome; but do as much as in them lies,  
 asperse & blemish the sacred Person of his Majesty, with  
 the odious and hatefull sin of \* Perjury.

\* Was it ever  
 so frequent a  
 sin as now in  
 all sorts of late  
 Judges, Officers,  
 Subjects?

\* Do none de-  
 serve as severe  
 now?

\* See Cooke's 3.  
 125, 127, and  
 133. Ho-  
 mers, page 284, 285. Speeds History page 651. Shaw, Walsingham, Daniel is  
 18. E. 1.

My Lords, the bawdiness of this offence is most  
 legible in the\* severe punishment, which former Ages  
 have inflicted upon those Judges, who have broken any  
 part of their Oaths willingly, though in things not  
 so dangerous to the Subject, as in the case in que-  
 stion.

\* Sir Thomas Wayland, Chief Justice of the Common  
 Pleas 17. E. 1. was attainted of Felony for taking Bribes,  
 page 133. Ho-  
 mers, page 284, 285. Speeds History page 651. Shaw, Walsingham, Daniel is  
 18. E. 1.

'and his Lands and Goods forfeited, as appears in the Pleas  
of Parliament, 18 E. 3. and he was banished the Kingdome,  
as unworthy to live in the State, against which he  
had so much offended.

'Sir \* William Thorpe Chief Justice of the Kings Bench,  
in Edward the third's time, having of five persons re- \* See Books 3  
ceived five severall Bribes, which in all amounted to  
one hundred pounds, was for this alone, adjudged to  
be banged, and all his Goods and Lands forfeited: The rea-  
son of the Judgment is entered in the Roll, in these

'words. *Quia prædictus Willielmus\* Thorp, qui Sacramen-*

'*tuum Domini Regis erga populum suum habuit ad custodiendum, his name, or of*  
'*fregit malitiose, falso & rebelliter, quantum in ipso fuit, his Function*  
'*There is a notable Declaration in that Judgement, that since done as*  
'*this judgement was not to be drawn into example, & bad or worse*  
'*against any other Officers, who should break their* <sup>in an high-</sup>  
'*Oaths, but onely against those, qui prædictum Sacra-*

'*mentum fecerant, & frigerant, & \* habent Leges Anglie. Let Custodes.*  
'*ad custodiendum: That is, onely to the Judges Oaths, who Legum & Li-*  
'*have the Laws intrusted unto them. This Judgement* <sup>glize and those</sup>  
'*was given 24 E. 3. The next year in Parliament 25 E. glize and those*  
'*3. Numb. 10. it was debated in Parliament, whether* <sup>now called</sup>  
'*this Judgement was legal? Et nullo contradicente, it* <sup>Judges, re-</sup>  
'*was declared, TO BE JUST AND ACCORDING* <sup>member is?</sup>

'*TO THE LAW: and the \* same Judgement may be gi-* <sup>to the Report</sup>  
'*ven in time to come upon the like occasion. This case is in an irr and others*  
'*point, That it is death for any JUDGE willingly to break* <sup>now consideris</sup>  
'*his OATH in any part of it. This OATH of THORP*  
'*is entered in the Roll, and the same Verbatim with the*  
'*Judges OATH in 28 Edw. 3. and is the same which the*  
'*Judges now take. (And let those who have taken the*  
'*same Oath, with the \*OATHES OF SUPRE-* <sup>1645. 6. 21</sup>  
'*MACY and ALLEGIANCIE too, remember 3. fac. 6.*  
'*and apply this PRESIDENT, lest others do it for 7. fac. 6.*  
them.)

'Your Lordships will give me leave to observe the dif-  
ferences between that and the case in question.

1. 'That of *Thorp*, was onely a selling of the Law by  
'*Retaile*, to these five persons; for he had five severall  
'Bribes, of these five persons; the Passage of the Law  
'to the rest of the Subjects, for ought appears, was free  
'and open. But these *Opinions* are a conveyance of the  
'Law by *whole sale*, and that not so, but from the Sub-  
'ject.

2. 'In that of *Thorp*, as to those five persons, it was  
'not an *absolute deniall of Justice*, it was not a damming  
'up, but a straitning onely of the *Chanel*. For whereas,  
'the Judges ought *Judicium reddere*, that is, the Lawes  
'being THE BIRTH-RIGHT and INHERITANCE  
'OF THE SUBJECT, the Judge when the parties in  
'suit demand Judgment, should *re-dare*, freely restore  
'the Right unto them; now he doth not *dare*, but *ven-  
dere*, with hazard onely of perverting Justice; for the  
'party that buyes the Judgment, may have a good and  
'honest cause. But these *Opinions*, besides that, they have  
'cost the Subjects very dear, dearer than any; nay, I  
'think, I may truly say, than all the unjust Judgments  
'that ever have been given in this Realm, witnesse the  
'many hundred thousand pounds, which under colour

\* This is no-  
thing incompa-  
rison to the late  
Taxes, Ship mo-  
ney, Excises im-  
posed on the  
Subjects, with-  
out a Parlia-  
ment, amount-  
ing to above 20  
times as much  
as the Kings  
Ship mony, and  
more frequent,  
and endlesse then  
tis.

rison to seven hundred thousand pounds and upwards,  
that have been paid unto the *Treasurers of the Navy* (in  
sundry years) besides what the Subjects have been for-  
ced to pay *Sheriffs, Sheriffs Bailiffs* (and now an hun-  
dred times more to *Troopers, and Souldiers*, who for-  
cibly levy their unlawfull Contributions and Excises,  
though adjudged HIGH TREASON in *Strafford's case*,  
and proved such by *Master St. John*) and otherwise;  
which altogether as is conceived, amounts not to lesse  
than a *Million* (in five years space, whereas we pay above  
two Millions in Taxes, Impots, Excises, every year)  
besides the infinite vexations of the Subject, by suits in  
Law, birding them over, and attendance at the Coun-  
cel Table, taking them from their necessary employ-  
ments, in making *Sesses* and *Collections*, and impre-  
sonment

sonment of their persons ( all now trebled to what then. ) I say, Besides what is past, to make our miseries compleat, they have as much as in them is, MADE THEM ENDLESSE ( as others since have done, by unceasant endlesse Taxes and Excises: ) for by these opinions, they have put upon themselves and their successors, *An impossibility of ever doing us right again, and an incapacity upon us of demanding it so long as they continue.* (As the Compilers of the late Instrument, with 42 Strings, intitled, *The Government of the Common Wealth of England, &c.* Article 1, 2, 3, 9, 10, 12, 22, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 31, 32, 36, 37, 38, 39. have done, as far as they, and much beyond them. )

In that sore famine in the land of Egypt, when the inhabitants were reduced to the next door to death; ( for there they say, why should we die? ) for bread, first they give their money, next their Flocks and Cattle; last of all, their Persons and Lands for Bread, all beholding to it became Pharaohs; but by this, *Lex Regia*, there is a transaction made, not only of our Persons, but of our bread likewise, wherewith our persons should be sustained; that was for bread, this of our bread: For since these Opinions, if we have any thing at all, we are \*not at all beholding TO THE LAW FOR IT, but are wholly cast UPON THE MERCY and GOODNESSE OF THE KING.

Again, there the Egyptians themselves, sold them selves, and all they had to the King; if ours had been so done; if it had been so done by our own free consent in PARLIAMENT, we had the lese cause to complain. But it was done against our Wills, and by those who were intrusted, and that UPON OATH, with the preservation of these things for us. The Laws are our Forts and Battricks of defence: If the Captain of a Castle, only out of fear and cowardice, and not for any compliance with the enemy, surrender it, this is Treason, as was adjudged in Parliament, 1 R. 2. in the two Cases of Gomines and Weston, and in the Case of the Lord Gray, for surrendering

Barwick

' Barwick Castle to the Scots , in Edward the thirds time ,  
 ' though good Defence had been made by him , and that  
 ' he had lost his eldest Son in maintenance of the Siege ;  
 ' and yet the losse of a CASTLE loseth not the Kingdom ,  
 ' onely the place and adjacent parts , with trouble to the  
 ' whole . But by these Opinions , there is a Surrender  
 ' made of all our Legall Defence of Property : that which  
 ' hath been Preacht , is now judged ; that there is no

\* Is there any  
 ' between the  
 ' powers and  
 ' them , further  
 ' or longer than  
 ' they please ?

' Meum and Tuum , \* between the KING AND  
 ' PEOPLE ; besides that which concerns our Per-  
 ' sons .

\* Are they not  
 ' so now ?

' The LA W is the TEMPLE , the SANCTUARY , whe-  
 ' ther Subjects ought to run for SHELTER and RE-  
 ' FUGE : Hereby it is become Tempium sine Numine , as  
 ' as was the Temple built by the Roman Emperour , who  
 ' after he had built it , put no Gods into it : We have  
 ' the Letter of the Law still , but not the sense : We have  
 ' the Fabrick of the TEMPLE still , but the \*Dii Tutela-  
 ' res are gone . But this is not all the case , that is , That  
 ' the law now ceaseth to aid and defend us in our RIGHTS ,  
 ' for then possession alone were a good Title , if there  
 ' were no Law to take it away : Occupanti concederetur ,  
 ' & melior esset Possidens conditio : But this , though too  
 ' bad , is not the worst : for besides that which is Privi-  
 ' lege in these Opinions , there is somewhat Positive .  
 ' For now the Law doth not onely not defend us , but the Law ,

\* It is not so  
 ' now , when a-  
 ' mothers who con-  
 ' demned and be-  
 ' headed him for  
 ' a Tyrant , say ,  
 ' pretend and at-  
 ' tended , makes our persons and all we have liable to bare Will and  
 ' it over , and o-  
 ' ther .

Note .

' it self , ( by temporizing Judges and Lawyers ) is made the  
 ' Instrument of taking all away . For whensoever \* his Ma-  
 ' tress or his Successors , shall be pleased to say , that the good and  
 ' safety of the Kingdome is concerned , and that the whole King-  
 ' dome is in danger ; the when , and how the same is to be preven-  
 ' tive . By this meanes , the SANCTUARY is turned into a  
 ' Shambles ; the Ports are not slighted , that so they might  
 ' neither do us good or hurt ; But they are held against us  
 ' by those who ought to have held them for us , and the mouth of  
 ' our own Canon is turned upon our own selves : ( And that by  
 ' our

our own Military Officers, Souldiers and others since, as well as the Ship-money Judges then. ) Thus far Master Oliver St. John (by the Commons Order) whose words I thought fit thus to transcribe at large, because not only most pertinent, but seasonable for the present times; wherein as in a Looking Glasse, some pretended Judges and Grandees, of these present and late p<sup>t</sup> times, may behold their own faces and deformities, and the whole Nation their sad condition under them. In the residue of that Printed Speech, he compares the *Treason* of the Ship-money Judges, and of Sir Robert Tresilium and his Complices in the 1<sup>st</sup> of K.2. (condemned, executed for Traitors by Judgment in Parliament, for endeavouring to subvert the Laws and Statutes of the Realm by their illegal Opinions, then delivered to King Richard at Nottingham Castle, not out of conspiracy, but for fear of death, and corporall Torments, wherewith they were menaced;) whose offence he makes transcendent to theirs in six particulars, as those who please may there read at leisure, being over large to transcribe.

\* worth conf-  
deration of  
those of the  
long robe,

I could here inform you, that the Fundamental Laws of our Nation, are the same in the Body Politique of the Realm, as the Arteries, Nerves, Veines, are in, and to the natural Body, the Bark to the Tree; the Foundation to the House: and therefore the cutting of them asunder, or their Subversion, must of necessity, kill, destroy, disjoyn and ruine the whole Realm at once: Wherefore it must be Treason in the highest degree, But I shall onely subjoyn here some materiall Passages, in Master St. Johns Argument at Law, concerning the Attaint of High Treason of Thomas Earle of Strafford, before a Committee of both Houses of Parliament in Westminister Hall, Aprill 29. 1641. Soon after Printed and published by Order of the Commons House: Whereto p.8. he lays down this Position; recited again, p.64.

That ( Strafford's) endeavouring, To subvert the Fundamental Laws and Government of England and Ireland, and instead therefore to introduce a Tyrannical

call Government against L. W., is Treason by the Common Law. That Treasons at the Common Law are not taken away by the Statutes of 25. E. 3. 14. &c. 10. & 11. Hen. 7. &c. See any of them.

The Authorities, Judgements, In and out of Parliament, which he cites to prove it, have been already mentioned, some others he omitted: I shall therefore but transcribe his Reasons to evince it to be Treason, superadded to those alledged by him against the Ship money Judges.

Page 12. It is a War against the King. (Let our Military Officers and Souldiers consider it) when intended. For alteration of the Laws or Government in any part of them. This is a levying War against the King (and so Treason within the Statute of 25. E. 3.)

1. Because the King doth maintain and protect the Laws in every part of them.

2. Because they are the Kings Laws: He is the Fountayn from whence in their severall Channels, they are derived to the Subject. Whence all our indictments run thus: 'Trespasses laid to be done, Contra pacem Domini Regis, &c. against the Kings peace for exorbitant offences, though not intended against the Kings Person; against the King his Crown and Dignity.

Page 64. In this I shall not labour at all to prove, That the endeavouring by words, Counsels and actions, To subvert the Fundamental Laws and Government of the Kingdome, is Treason at the Common Law. If there be any Common Law Treasons at all let \*NOTHING TREASON. IF THIS IS NOT, TO MAKE A KINGDOME NO KINGDOME. Take the Policy and Government away, Englands but a piece of earth, wherein

many are guilty of this Treason. cap. 10. 3, 4, 5. cap. 1. 4. Zech. 9. v. 5. Hab. 1. 10, 14. Mic. 4. 9. 20. AMOS 1. 23, 14, 15. Lam. 5. 16. Ezech. 19. 1, 14. 1/2, 17, 3, 6, 7, 16. Jer. 17. 35, 17. cap. 18, 7, 8, 20, 22, 3, 10, 13. cap. 25, 8, 10, 38. cap. 51, 20. Proverb 18, 2. Ezech. 17, 14. cap. 19, 14, 25, 1/2, 47 verse 5. Daniel 4. v. 18, 19, 20.

Page 70, 71, 72. The horridnesse of the offence is endeavouring to overthrow the Laws and present Government, hath been fully opened before. The Parliament is the representation of the whole Kingdome, wherein the King as Head, your Lordships as the more Noble, and the Commons, the other Members are knit together in one body Politique. This dissolves the Arteries and Ligaments that hold the body together, THE LAWS. He that takes away the Laws, takes not away the Allegiance of one Subject only, but of the whole Kingdome. It was made Treason by the Statute of 13 Eliz. for her time to affirm, That the Laws of the Realm do not bind the descent of the Crown. Are they so now? and who have dissolved the Ligaments that formerly united and held them together?

No Law, no descent at all, NO LAWS NO PEERAGE, no ranks nor degrees of men, the same condition to all. Its Treason to kill a Judge upon the Bench; this kills not Judicem, sed Judicium. There be twelve men, but no Law; never a Judge among them. Its Felony to embezell any one of the Judicall Records of the Kingdome: THIS AT ONCE SWEEPS THEM ALL AWAY and FROM ALL. Its Treason to counterfeit a Twenty shilling peice; Here's a counterfeit. Have we not many counterfeit laws and not the true Coyn our own. Its Treason to counterfeit the great Seal for an Acre of Land: No property is left hereby to any Land at all: NOTHING TREASON NOW, AGAINST KING OR KING-DOME; NO LAW TO PUNISH IT.

My Lords, If the question were asked in Westminster Hall, whether this were a Crime punishable in the Star Chamber, or in THE KINGS BENCH, by fine or Imprisonment? They would say, It were higher. If whether Felony? They would say, That is an Offence onely against the Life or Goods of some one, or few persons. It would I believe be answered by the JUDGES, as it was by the Chief Justice Birrell, in the 21 R. 2. That though he could not judge the Case TREASON there before him, yet if he

were

' were a Peer in Parliament; HE WOULD SO AD-  
' JUDGE IT. ( And so the Peers did here in Strafford,  
' and not long after in Canterbury's case, who both lost  
' their Heads on Tower-Hill.)

I have transcribed these Passages of Mr. Oliver S. John  
at large for five Reasons.

1. Because they were the Voice and Sence of the whole  
House of Commons by his mouth; who afterwards owned  
and ratified them by their special Order, for their publication  
in Print, for information and satisfaction  
of the whole Nation, and terror of all others, who  
should after that, either secretly or openly, by fraud or  
force, directly or indirectly, attempt the subversion of  
all, or any of our Fundamental Laws or Liberties, or the  
alteration of our Fundamental Government, or setting up  
any Arbitrary or Tyrannical Power, Taxes, Impositions,  
or new kinds of arbitrary, Judicatories, and impositions  
against these our Laws and Liberties.

2. To mind and inform all such who have not only  
equalled, but transcended Strafford and Canterbury in their  
their HIGH TREASONS, even since these PUBLICA-  
TIONS, SPEECHES, and their EXEMPLARY EXECU-  
TIONS, of the bainousness, in excusableness,  
wilfulness, maliciousness, Capitalness of their Crimes;  
which not only the whole Parliament in generality,  
but many of themselves, in particular, so severely pro-  
secuted, condemned, and inexorably punished of late  
years in them: that so they may sadly consider, bewail,  
repent, reform them with all speed and diligence, as  
much as in them lies. And withall, I shall exhaust them  
severally to consider that Gospel testifying passage, (If  
they have not quite sinned away all Conscience, Shame,  
Christianity, Religion and Fear of the last Judge, and  
Judgement to come) Rom. 4.1, 2, 3. Therefore thou art  
incorrigible O man, whatsoever thou art that judgest, for  
wherein thou judgest another, thou CONDEMNEST  
THY SELF, FOR THOU THAT JUDGEST  
DOEST THOU THE SAME THING. But we  
are

are sure that the Judgment of God is according to truth, against them who commit such things. And thinkest thou this, O men, that judge them which do such things; and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the Judgment of God?

3. To exhort all Lawyers (especially such, who of late times have taken upon them the title & power of Judges) to examine their Conscience, Actions, how far, all or any of them have been guilty, in the highest degree of these Crimes and Treasons, so highly aggravated, so exemplarily punished of former and later times, in corrupt, cowardly time-serving, degenerate Lawyers, and Judges, rather than Judges, to the disgrace of their Profession, (now generally spoken against) their own dishonour, infamy, reproach, the scandal of Religion, which some of them have eminently profited: the pre-judice and subversion of the Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Rights, Privileges of our Nation, Peers, Parliaments, and of the ancient Fundamental Government of this famous Kingdom, whereof they are Members: and that contrary to some of their own late Judgments, Sciences, Consciences, Votes, Related Arguments, Speeches, Declarations, against others, even in and out of Parliament: and their own first Charges in their Circuits, repugnant to their latter.

4. To instruct those Jesuit Anabaptists, Davelers, and their Factors, (especially John Come, and the rest of the Compilers, Publishers, Abettors of the Pamphlet intituled, *Defenitio Criminalis John Liburn, tried and vsd;* and other forementioned publications;) who professedly set themselves by Words, Writings, Counsels and overt Actions to subvert both our old Fundamentall (with all other) Laws, Liberties, Customs, Parliaments, and Government, what treasonable Malcontents, Traitors, and Enemies they are to the publick, and what Capital punishments they may incurre, as well as domestic, should they be legally prosecuted for the same: and therupon to advise them timely to repent of, and desist from such high Treasonable attempts.

5. To clear both my self and this my seasonable Defence, of our Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Government, from the least suspicion or shadow of Faction, Sedition, Treason and Enmity to the publique peace, weal, settlement of the Nation, which those, (and those only) who are most factious, and seditious, and the greatest Enemies, Traitors to the publique tranquillity, Weal, Laws, Liberties, Government, and establishment of our Kingdome (as the premises evidence) will be ready maliciously to asperse both me and it with, as they have done heretofore some either of my Writings of this Nature, with all which they must first brand Mr. St. John, Mr. Pym, the whole House of Commons, the two last, with all other Parliaments forecited, and themselves too (from which they are so much changed, and degenerated of late years) ere they can accuse, traduce, or censure me, who do but barely relate, apply their words, and judgments in their present times, without malice or partiality, for the whole Kingdome's benefit; security, and re-settlement.

To these punctual full Juries of Records and Parliament Authorities in point, I could accumulate Sc. Edward Cook his 3. Institute, p. 9. printed and authorised by the House of Commons speciall Order, the last Parliament. The severall Speeches of M. Hide, M. Waller, M. Pierpoint, and M. Hollis, July 6. 1641. at the Lord's Bar in Parliament, by Order of the Commons House, at the Impeachment of the Scropomy Judges of High Treason, printed in *Diurnal Occurrences, and Speeches in Parliament*, London, 1641. p. 237. & 264. M. Samuel Brown's Argument at law before the Lords and Commons at Canterbury's Attainder, all manifesting their endeavouring to subvert the Fundamental Laws and Government of the Realm, to be High Treason;

\* See Exact Collection, p. 4. 12. 243, 262. 321. with sundry other printed Authorities to prove. That we have \* Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Rights, and a Fundamental Government, like this, which ought not to be annihilated, violated, or subverted upon any pretences whatsoever, by any power or prevailing Faction. Which Fundamental Rights, Liberties, Laws, Sc. Thomas Fairfax, and the Army under his Command,

Command, by their Declaration of June 14. 1647. particularly promise and engage, to assert & vindicate against all arbitrary power, violence, oppression, and against all particular parties or Interests whatsoever, which they may doe well to remember and make good. But to avoid prolixity (the double Jury of irrefragable and punctual authority already produced being sufficient to satisfie the most obstinate opposites formerly contradicting it) I shall onely adde these swaying authorities more, where-with I shall conclude this point.

The first, is a very late one, in a Treatise, intituled, *A True State of the Common Wealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the Dominions thereunto belonging; in Reference to the late established Government by a Lord Protector and a PARLIAMENT.* It being the

*Judgement of DIVERSE PERSONS*, who through-out these late troubles, have approved themselves <sup>\* If we believe</sup> ~~are fandly falso~~ to the Cause and interest of God, and their <sup>themselves in</sup> ~~hoods in it, as~~ <sup>their own causes</sup> ~~well as some~~ <sup>truths.</sup> *COUNTRY*, presented to the publicke, for the satisfaction of others. Printed at London, 1654. who relating the miscarriages of the last ASSEMBLY of West-minster Sected, nominated by the Generallers of them, the Army Officers onely, not the people, use these expressions of them, page 13, 14, 16, 17, 21, 22. *But on the contrary, it so fell out in a short time, that there appeared many in this Assembly of very contrary principles to the interest aforesaid, which led them violently on to attempt and promote many things, the consequence whereof would have been, A subverting of the Fundamental Laws of the Land, the Destruction of Property, and an utter extinguisment of the Gospel. In truth their Principles led them TO A PULLING DOWN ALL AND ESTABLISHING NOTHING.* So that instead of the expected settlement, they were running into FURTHER ANARCHY AND CONFUSION. As to the Laws and Civil Rights of the Nation, nothing would serve them, but a TOTALL ERADICATION OF THE OLD, AND INTRODUCTION OF A NEW:

and

and for the good Old Laws of England (the Guardians of our Laws and Fortunes) established with prudence, and confirmed by the experience of many Ages and Generations: (The Preservation whereof, was a<sup>re</sup> principall ground

<sup>of our late quarrell with the King)</sup> having been once abolished, what could we have expected afterwards, but an inthroning of Arbitrary power in the Seat of Judicature, and an exposing of our Lives, our Estates, our Liberties, and all that is dear unto us, as a Sacrifice to the boundlesse appetite of mere Will and Power, &c.

<sup>\* Some mens</sup>  
<sup>act ons since,</sup>  
<sup>declare they</sup>  
<sup>had some other</sup>  
<sup>ground and</sup>  
<sup>ayms than thi.</sup>  
<sup>\* Those who s.</sup>  
<sup>vere and dif-</sup>  
<sup>joyn one house</sup>  
<sup>from the other</sup>  
<sup>and by force of</sup>  
<sup>armed power</sup>  
<sup>seclude, exclude</sup>  
<sup>and disjoyn the</sup>  
<sup>members of the</sup>  
<sup>same house, and</sup>  
<sup>from another,</sup>  
<sup>so many times</sup>  
<sup>one after ano-</sup>  
<sup>ther, & justi-</sup>  
<sup>fie it too, are</sup>  
<sup>the greatest dis-</sup>  
<sup>joiners of the</sup>  
<sup>House and Par-</sup>  
<sup>liament, and</sup>  
<sup>very unlikely to</sup>  
<sup>make any firm</sup>  
<sup>or reall settle-</sup>  
<sup>ment of this</sup>  
<sup>Nation.</sup>

Things being at this passe, and the House (through these proceedings) \* perfectly disjointed, it was in vain to look for a settlement of this Nation from them, thus constituted: but on the contrary, nothing else could be expected; But that the Common-wealth should sink under their hands, and the great cause hitherto so happily upheld and maintained, to be forever lost, through their propperious management of these affairs, where with they had been intrusted. Whereupon they justifie their dissolution, and turning them forcibly out of doores by the Soldiers, with shame and infamy; to prevent that destruction, which thereby was coming on THE WHOLE LAND, by this New Powder Treason plot, set on foot by the Jesuites and Habbaptists, to destroy our Laws, Liberties, Properties, Ministers, and Religion it self, at one blow, and that in the very Parliament House, (where some destroyed and blowed up Kings, Peers and Parliaments themselves, as well as Lawes and Parliament Privileges of late years) where they had been constantly defended, vindicated, preserved, established in all former Ages, by ALL TRUE ENGLISH PARLIAMENTES.

<sup>\* See my Speech</sup>  
<sup>in Parliament,</sup>  
<sup>p. 100. to 103.</sup>  
<sup>\* The second is, \* The Votes of the House of Commons,</sup>  
<sup>concerning a Paper presented to them, entituled, An</sup>  
<sup>Agreement of the people for a firm & present peace, upon grounds</sup>  
<sup>of Common Right, 9. November 1647, v. 1.</sup>

Reffolved

*Resolved upon the Question, That the matters contained in these Papers, are destructive to the being of Parliaments, and to the fundamental Government of this Kingdom.*

*Resolved, &c. That a Letter be sent to the General, and those Papers inclosed, together with the Vote of this House upon them; And that he be desired to examine the proceedings of this business in the Army ( where it was first coyed ) and return an Account hereof to this House.*

These Votes were seconded soon after with these ensuing Votes, entered in the *Commons Journal*, and printed by their special Order, 23 Novemb. 1647.

*A Petition directed to the Supreme Authority of England. The Commons in Parliament assembled, The humble Petition of many Free-born people of Eng'and, &c. was read the first and second time.*

*Resolved upon the Question, That this Petition is, A sedition and contemptuous avowing, and prosecution of a former Petition, and Paper annexed, stiled, An agreement of the People, formerly adjudged by this House, to be destructive to the being of Parliaments, and Fundamental Government of the Kingdom.*

*Resolved, &c. That Thomas Prince Cheese-monger, and Samuel Chidley, bee forthwith committed Prisoners to the Prison of the Gate-house, there to remain Prisoners during the pleasure of this House, for a seditions avowing, and prosecution of a former Petition and Paper annexed, stiled, An Agreement of the People, formerly adjudged by this House, to be destructive to the being of Parliaments, and fundamental Government of the Kingdom.*

*Resolved, &c. That Jeremy Ives, Thomas Taylor, and William Larmer, bee forth-with committed to the Prison of Newgate, there to remain Prisoners during the pleasure of this House, for a seditions and contemptuous avowing, and prosecution of a former Petition and Paper annexed, stiled, An Agreement of the People; formerly adjudged by this House, to be destructive to the being of Parliaments, and fundamental Government of the Kingdom.*

*Resolved, &c. That a Letter be prepared and sent to the General,*

General; taking notice of his proceeding in the execution ( according to the Rules of Warre ) of a *Martinous* person ( avowing, and prosecuting this Agreement in the Army contrary to these Votes ) at the Rendezvous near Ware, and to give him *thanks* for it ; and to desire him to prosecute that *Business to the bottome*, and to bring such guilty persons as he shall think fit, to condign and exemplary punishment.

*Resolved, &c. That the Votes upon the Petition and Agreement annexed, and likewise the Votes upon his Petition, be forth-with printed and published.*

After which, by a *special Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament*, 17 Decemb. 1647. no person whatsoever, who had contrived, plotted, prosecuted, or entred into that Engagement, intituled, *The Agreement of the people*, declared *To bee destructive to the being of Parliaments, and Fundamental Government of the Kingdome*; for one whole year was to be elected, chosen, or put into the Office, or place of *Lord Mayor, or Alderman, Sheriff, Deputy of a Ward, or Common Counsellman of the City of London, or to have a voyce in the Election of any such Officers.*

All these particulars, with the Capital proceedings against *White*, and others who foymed this *Agreement in the Army*, abundantly evidence the verity of my foresaid *Proposition*, and the extraordinary guilt of those Members and Souldiers, who contrary to their own *Votes, Ordinances, Proceedings, and Censures of others*, have since prosecuted this, the like, or far worse *Agreement*, to the destruction of our ancient Parliaments, and their Priviledges, and of the fundamental Government, Laws, and Liberty of our Nation: which I wish they would now sadly lay to heart, with that saying of *Augustine*, approved by all sorts of Divines, and ( a ) *Calvists*; *Non remittitur peccatum, nisi restitutum ablatum, & scindum est, Quod Restitutio est IN PRISTINUM STATUM POSITIO.*

The third, is the memorable Statutes of 3 Jacobi, c. 1, 2, 4, & 5, which relating the old *Gunpowder Treason* of the *Jesuits and Papists*, and their infernal, inhuman, barbarous, detestable plot, to blow up the *King, Queen, Prince, Lords, Commons*, and the whole *House of Peers* with *Gunpowder*, when they,

(a) See *Gratian*, *Caus. 2.*  
Qu. 1. 2.  
*Summa Anglica, Rosella, & Hostiensis*. Tit. *Restitutio.*

they should have been assembled in Parliament, in the upper House of Parliament, upon the fifth of November, in the year of our Lord, 1605. do aggravate the hainouiness and transcendency thereof, by this circumstance, That it was ( as some of the principal Conspirators confessed ) purposely devised and concluded to be done in the said House, That where sundry necessary and religious Laws, for preservation of the Church and State, were made, ( which they falsely and slanderously termed, *Cruel Laws enacted against them, and their Religion* ) both Place and Persons should be all destroyed and blown up at once ; and by these dangerous Consequences, if it had not been miraculously prevented, but taken effect ; That it would have turned to the utter ruine, overthrow, and subversion of the whole State and Common-wealth of this flourishing and renowned Kingdom, of Gods true Religion therein established by Law, and of our Laws and Government. For which horrid Treason, they were all attainted, and then executed as Traitors, and some of their Heads, *Quarters*, set upon the Parliament House for terror of others. Even so let all other Traitors, Conspirators against, all Blowers up, and subverters of our fundamental Laws, Liberties, Government, Kings, Parliaments, and Religion, treading presumptuously in their Jesuitical footsteps, perish, O Lord, but let all them who cordially love, and strenuously maintain them against all Conspirators, Traitors, Underminers, Invaders whatsoever, be as the Sun when hee goeth forth in his might ; That the Land may have rest, peace, settlement again, for as many years at least, as it had before our late Innovations, Warrs, Confusions, by their restitution and re-establishment.

\* See Speeds Hist. p. 1250. &c Mr. Vicars History of the Gunpowder Treason, The Arraignment of Traitors.

\* Judg. 5. 21.

### C H A P. 2.

**H**aving thus sufficiently proved, That the Kingdom, and Freeman of England, have some ancient Hereditary Rights, Liberties, Franchises, Privileges, Customs, properly called FUNDAMENTAL, as likewise a Fundamental Government, no ways to bee altered, undermined, subverted, directly or indirectly, under the guilt and pain of High Treason in

those who attempt it, especially by fraud, force, or armed Power.

I shall in the second place present you in brief Propositions, & Summary of the chiefest and most considerable of them, which our prudent Ancestors in former Ages, and our latest real Parliaments, have both declared to be, and eagerly contested for, as fundamental, and essential to their very being, and well being, as a Free People, Kingdom, Republick, unwilling to be enslaved under any Yokes of Tyranny, or Arbitrary Power: that so the whole Nation may the more perspicuously know and discern them, the more strenuously contend for them, the more vigilantly watch against their violation<sup>1</sup>, underwinnings in any kinde, by any Powers or pretences whatsoever, and transmit, perpetuate them intirely to their Posterities, as their best and chiefest inheritance.

I shall comprise the sum and substance of them all in these *Ten Propositions*, beginning with the Subjects Property, which hath been most frequently, universally invaded, assaulted, undermined by our Kings, and their evil Instruments heretofore, and others since, and thereupon more strenuously, frequently, vigilantly maintained, fenced, regained, retained by our Nobles, Parliaments, and the people in all Ages ( till of late years ) than any or all of the rest put together, though every of them hath been constanly defended, maintained, when impugned, or incroached upon, by our Ancestors, and our selves.

\* See the Laws of King Edward the Confessor, confirmed by William the Conqueror, Lxx. 55, 56, 57. The great Charters of King John, and Henry 3. c. 29,

30, 25 E. 1. 5, 6. 34 E. 1. De Tallagio. c. 1. 14 E. 3. Stat. 1. c. 21. Stat. 3. c. 1. 35 E. 3. Stat. 2. c. 1. 15 E. 3. Stat. 3. c. 5. 21 E. 3. Rot. Parl. N. 16. 27 E. 3. Stat. 2. c. 2. 36 E. 3. Rot. Parl. N. 16. 38 E. 3. c. 2. 45 E. 3. Rot. Parl. N. 42. 11 H. 4. Rot. Parl. N. 50. 1 R. 3. c. 2. The Petition of Right, 3 Caroll, the Act against Ship money, Knighthood, Tonnage, and Poundage, 16. & 17. Caroll.

lawful.

lawful English Parliament duly summoned and elected; except only such ancient, legal Ayds, as they are specially obliged to render by their Tenures, Charters, Contracts, and the common Law of England.

2. That no Free-man of England ought to bee arrested, confined, imprisoned, or in any private Castles, or remote unusual Prisons, under Souldiers, or other Guardians, but only in usual or Common Gaols, under sworn responsible Goalers, in the County where he lives, or is apprehended, and where his friends may freely visit and relieve him with necessaries; And that only for some just and legal Cause express'd in the Writ, Warrant, or Process, by which he is arrested or imprisoned; which ought to be legally executed, by known, legal, responsible, sworn Officers of Justice, not unknown Military Officers, Troopers, or other illegal Catchpols; That no such Free-man ought to bee denied Bail, Mainprise, or the benefit of an *Habeas Corpus*, or any other Legal Writ for his enlargement, when Bailable or Mainprizable by Law; nor to be detained Prisoner for any real or pretended Crime, not bailable by Law longer than until the next general or special Gaol-delivery, held in the County where he is imprisoned; when and where he ought to be legally tried and proceeded against, or else enlarged by the Justices, without denial or delay of Right and Justice. And that no such Free-man may, or ought to be outlawed, exiled, condemned to any kind of Corporal punishment, loss of Life or Member, or otherwise destroyed or passed upon, but only by due and lawful Process, Indictment, and the lawful Trial, Verdict, and Judgement of his Peers, according to the good old Law of the Land, in some usual Court of publick Justice; not by any and in new, illegal, Military, or other Arbitrary Judicatories, Committees, or Courts of High Justice, unknowne to our Ancestors.

3. That the ordinary standing *Militia, Force, and Arms of the Kingdom*, ought to reside in the *Nobility, Gentry, Freeholders, and Trained Bands of the Kingdom*, not in Mercenary Officers and Souldiers, receiving pay, and Contributions from the people; more apt to oppret, inslave, betray, than protect their Laws, Liberties, and to protract than end their Warrs and Taxes. That no Free-men of England, unless it bee by

\* See Magna  
Charta, c. 29.  
& Cooks Insti-  
tutes on it.

5 E. 3. c. 9  
15 E. 3. c. 1, 5  
23 E. 3. c. 4  
37 E. 3. c. 18  
42 E. 3. c. 3  
2 R. 2. c. 2 4  
5 H. 4. c. 10  
19 H. 7. c. 10  
23 H. 8. c. 8

The Petition of  
Right, 3 Car. 1,  
and other Acts  
in ch. 3. 2 H. 4.  
Rot. Parl. N.  
60 & 69.  
\* 4 E. 3. c. 7  
17 R. 2. c. 10

\* See the Laws  
of Edward the  
Confessor, and  
William the  
Conqueror,

Lxx 35. 35, 6,  
58. Rot. Parl. A-  
bridgement.

11. A mon. 35. E. 3. c. 7  
Rot. Parl. N.

23. The Sta-  
tutes for im-  
pounding Soul-  
diers, 16 & 17  
Special carl.

2 E. 3. Stat. 2. special Grant and Act of Parliament, may or ought to be compelled, enforced, pressed, or arrayed to go forth of his own County ( much less out of the Realm into foreign parts ) against his will, in times of Warre or Peace ; or except he be specially obliged thereto by antient Tenures and Charters, save only upon the sudden coming of strange enemies into the Realm ; and then he is to array himself only in such sort, as he is bound to do by the ancient Laws and Customs of the Kingdom still in force.

(a) See *Magna Charta*, c. 29. 5 E. 3. c. 9. 15 E. 3. c. 4. 21 E. 3. Rot. Parl. N. 18. 15 E. 3. N. 35. 26, 27, 28 E. 3. c. 4. Rot. Parl. N. 16. 28 E. 3. c. 3. 37 E. 3. c. 8. 42. E. 3. c. 13. 2 R. 2. Parl. 2. c. 2. 7 R. 3. c. 4. 2 H. 4. Rot. Parl. N. 60. 69. 15 H. 6. c. 4. The Petition of Right, 3 Car. and the Statutes against Ship-money, Knighthood, Tonnage and Poundage, 16 & 17 Carols.

(b) See 1 Sam. 7. 1, to the end. c. 11. 14. 15. c. 12. 1. 2 Sam. 5. 1, 2, 3. c. 16. 18. 1 King. 12. 3. to 21. c. 16. 16. 6. 20. 7. 8. 2 King. 11. 1. 10. 21. c. 21. 24. c. 23. 30. (c) King *Fabius Magna Charta, Matis, Paris*, p. 247. 1. N. 2. c. 4. 200. 4. Insti. 4. 1; My Plea for the Lord, My Ardua Regni, The Levellers levelled, and Epistle before my Speech in Parliament. 4 E. 3. c. 14. 36 E. 3. 2. 20. 30 E. 3. N. 151. 1 R. 2. N. 95. 2 R. 4. N. 4. 5.

4 That no (a) Free-man of *England* may, or ought to be disinherited, disfiscised, dispossessed, or deprived of any Inheritance, Free-hold, Office, Liberty, Custom, Franchise, Chattels, Goods, whatsoever, without his own Gift, Grant, or free Consent, unless it be by lawful Processe, Trial, and Judgement of his Peers, or special Grant by Act of Parliament ; nor to be denied or delayed common Right or Justice in any case.

5 That the old received Government, Laws, Statutes, Customs, Priviledges, Courts of Justice, legal Processe of the Kingdom, and Crown, ought not to be altered, repealed, suppressed in any sort ; nor any new form of Government, Law, Statute, Ordinance, Court of Judicature, Writs, or legal proceedings, instituted, or imposed on all, or any of the Free-men of *England*, by any person or persons, but only in and by the (b) Kingdoms, peoples free and full precedent consent in a lawful Parliament, wherein the Legislative power solely resides.

6 That Parliaments ought to be duly summoned, and held, for the good and safety of the Kingdom, every year, or every three years at least, or so soon as there is just occasion. That the Election of all Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses, to sit and serve in Parliament ( and so of all other Elective Officers ) ought to be free. That (c) all Members of Parliament Hereditary or Elective, ought to be present, and there freely to speak and vote

according

according to their Judgements and Conscience, without any over-awing Guards to terrifie them; and none to be forced, sequestered, or secluded thence by force or fraud. That all Parliaments not thus duly and freely summoned, elected, freely held, but unduly packed, without due Elections, or by forcible secluding, securing any of the Members, or not summoning all of them to the Parliament, and all Acts of Parliament fraudulently, or forcibly procured by indirect means (d), ought to be nullified, repealed, reputed void, and of dangerous precedent.

(d) See 39 H. 6.

c. 11. 17. E. 4.

c. 7. 1 H. 4.

N. 21, 22. 48.

1 H. 4. c. 3.

\* See *Ratfals*

Abridgement

of Statutes,

Title, Provision,

Promise, &amp;

Reme.

(e) *Leges Ed-**wardi Regis,**1. Lam-**bards Arch.*

R. 135, 136.

c. 7. Re-

port, *Calvins*

Case, 56, 7.

*Leges Williemi**Regis Lex. 58,*59. *Seldens**Note ad Edw-*

7 That neither the \* Kings, nor any Subjects of the Kingdom of England, may or ought to be summoned before any Foreign Powers or Jurisdictions whatsoever out of the Realm, or within the same, for any manner of Right, Inheritance, Thing belonging to them, or Offence done by them within the Realm, nor tried, nor judged by them.

8 That all Subjects of the Realm are (e) obliged by Allegiance, Oaths, and duty to defend their lawful King, Persons, Crowns, the Laws, Rights, and Priviledges of the Realm, and of Parliament, against all usurpers, Traytors, Violence, and Conspiracies. And that no Subject of this Realm, who according to his Duty, and Allegiance, shall serve his King in his Wares, for the just defence of him and the Land, against Foreign Enemies or Rebels, shall lose or forfeit anything for doing his true duty, service, and allegiance to him thereby, but utterly be discharged of all vexation, trouble, or losse.

1790, p. 291. 12 H. 7. c. 1. 18. 19, H. 7. c. 3. 25 H. 8. c. 22. 26 H. 8. c. 3. 28 H. 8. c. 7. 1 Eliz. c. 1. 3. 5. 2 Eliz. a. c. 1. 3 Jac. 1. 1. 2. 3 Jac. c. 1. 2. 4. 5. 7 Jac. c. 6. The Protestant, League and Covenant, and the ancient Oathes of Fealty, Homage, Mayors, Sheriff, Free-men.

9 That no publick Warre by Land or Sea ought to be made or leaved, with, or against any Foreign Nation: nor any publick Truce or League entered into with Foreign Realms or States, to binde the Nation, without their common advice and consent in Parliament.

10 That the Kings of England, or others, cannot grant away, alien, or subject the Crown, Kingdom, or ancient Crown Lands of England to any other, without their Nobles and Kingdoms full and free

free consent in Parliament. That the antient Honours, Manors, Lands, Rents, Revenues, Inheritances, Rights, and Perquisits of the Crown of *England*, originally settled thereon for the ease and exemption of the people from all kind of Taxes, payments whatsoever ( unless in case of extraordinary necessity ) and for defraying all the constant, ordinary expences of the Kingdome ( as the expences of the Kings houhold, Court, Officers, Judges, Ambassadors, Guard, Garrisons, Navy and the like ) ought not to be sold, alienated, given away or granted from it, to the prejudice of the Crown, and burdening of the people. And that all Sales, Alienations, Gifts, or Grants thereof, to the empairing of the publique Revenue, or prejudice of the Crown and peoples, are void in Law, and ought to be resumed, and repealed by our Parliaments and Kings, as they have \* frequently been in all former ages.

\* Daniels History p.78 79.  
80.123.10.12n.

2.5. 8. H 5.1.9.  
1.1.6. n.5. 1. 31.  
H.6. r.7.1 R.2.  
11.14.9. 1 H.4 n.  
100.6 H 4. n.4.  
15.8. H.4. n. 12.  
33. H.6. n.47.  
4. G. n. 39. 12.  
E.4. n.6.

For the Readers fuller satisfaction in each of these propositions ( some of which I must in the ensuing Chapter but briefly touch for brevity sake, having elsewhere fully debated them in print, ) I shall especially recommend unto him the perusal of such Tractates, and Arguments formerly published, wherein each of them hath been fully discussed, which he may peruse at his best leisure.

The First of these Fundamentalls, ( which I intend principally to insist on ) is fully asserted, debated, confirmed by 13. H.4. s. 14. By *Fortescue* Lord Chief Justice, and Chancellor of *England*, *de Laudibus Legum Anglie*, dedicated by him to King *Henry the 6.* s. 25. c. 36. By *Learned and necessary Argument against Impositions in the Parliament of 7. Jacobi*: by a late reverend Judge, Printed at *London* 1641. By *Mr. William Hakewell*, in his *Liberty of the Subject against Impositions*, maintained in an Argument in the Parliament of 7 Jacobi, Printed at *London* 1641. By *Judge Crooks* and *Judge Huttons*. Arguments concerning *Ship-money*, both Printed at *London* 1641. By the *Case of Ship-money* briefly discussed. *London* 1640. By *M. St. Johns Argument and Speech against Ship-money*, Printed at *London* 1641. By *Sir Edward Cook* in his *2 Institutes* p. 46, and 57. to 64. and 528. to 537. By the first and second *Remonstrance of the Lords & Commons in Parliament*, against

against the Commission of Array. Exact Collection p. 386. to 398. and 390. to 390. and by my own Humble Remonstrance against Ship-money, London 1643. The Fourth part of the Sovereign Power of Parliaments and Kingdome, p. 14. to 26. my Legall Vindication of the Liberties of England, against Illegall Taxes &c. London 1649. and by the Records and Statutes cited in the ensuing Chapter, referring for the most part to the first Proposition.

The second, third, and fourth of them, are largely debated and confirmed by a Conference desired by the Lords, and had by a Committee of both Houses, concerning the Rights and Priviledges of the Subject, 3 Aprilis 4 Caroli, Printed at London 1642. By Sir Edward Cook in his Institutes on Magna charta, c. 29. p. 45. to 57. By the first & second Remonstrance of the Lords and Commons against the Commission of Array, Exact Collection p. 386. and 390. to 390. By Judge Crooks, and Judge Huttons Argument against Ship-money. By Sir Robert Cotton his Posthumous p. 242. to 269. By my Breviate of the Prelates Encroachments on the Kings Prerogative, and the Subjects Liberties, p. 138. my New Discovery of the Prelates Tyranny, p. 137. to 183. and some of the ensuing Statutes, and records, ch. 3. See 1. H. 4. rot Parl. n. 22, 23, 24, 26, 28, 43, 44, 47.

The Fifth and Sixth of them, are fully cleared, vindicated in and by the Prologues of all our Councill, Statutes, Laws, before and since the Conquest. By 1. H. 4. Rot. Parl. n. 33, 34, 36. (an excellent full presidenc.) Sir Edward Cooks 4 Institutes, ch. 1. Mr. Cromptons Jurisdiction of Courts, Title High Court of Parliament. Mr. St. Johns speech against the Ship-money Judges, p. 32, 33. my Plea for the Lords; my Levellers levelled; my Ardua Regni; my Epistle before my Speech in Parliament; my Memento, my Sovereign Power of Parliaments and Kingdome, part. 1, 2, 3, 4. my Legal Vindication against illegal Taxes and pretended Acts of Parliament, London 1649. Prynnes the Member, reconciled to Prynne the Barrester, Printed the same year. My Historical Collection of the Ancient great Councils and Parliaments of England, London 1649. My Truth triumphing over falsehood, Antiquity

over Novelys, London 1645. 3 E. 1. c. 5, 4 E. 3. c. 14. 36 E. 3. c. 10. 1 H. 4. c. 3. 4. 5 R. 2. Stat. 2. c. 4. *Rastal tit.* Parliament. 1 H. 4. Rot. Parl. n. 21. 22. 48. 70. 31 H. 6. c. 1. 39 H. 6. c. 1. Rot. Parl. n. 8. 17 E. 4. c. 7. expresse in point, and some of the Records hereafter transcribed. In this I shall be more sparing, because so fully confirmed in these and other Treatises.

The *Seventh*, is ratified by Sir Edward Cooks *1. Institutes p. 97 98. 4 Institutes p. 89. and 5. report Cawdries case, of the Kings Ecclesiastical Laws, Rastals Abridgement of Statutes, Tit, Provisors, Prerogative, Rente, and other Records and Statutes in the ensuing Chapter.*

The *Eighth*, is verified by the Statutes quoted in the Margin to it, and by other Records in the third Chapter.

The *Ninth and Tenth*, are fully debated in my *Sovereign Power of Parliaments and Kingdoms*, par. 2. p. 2. to 34. part. 4. p. 1. to 13. and 162. to 170. touched in Sir Robert Cottons *Posthuma*, p. 174. 179. confirmed by sundry Presidents in the next Chapter. & by 1 H. 4. Rot. Parl. n. 32.

How all and every of these Fundamental Liberties, Rights, Franchises, Laws, have been unparalledly violated, subverted, in all and every particular, of late years, beyond all Presidents in the worst of former ages, even by their greatest pretended Pro-pugners, their own Prior Edicts, Instruments, Ordinances, Papers, together with their illegall Oppressions, Taxes, Excises, Imposts, Sequestrations, Rapines, Violences, unjust Proceedings of all kinds, will sufficiently evidence, if compared with the premised Propositions. Not to infist on any fore-past illegall Imposts, Taxes, Excises, under which the nation late-ly groaned, imposed on us by unparliamentary Junctoes, or the Army Officers alone from Anno 1648 to 1653. without any real Parliament by their own armed Jurisdiction. I shall here instance onyl in 3. or 4. particulars, relating wholly to the *First Proposition*, being of most generall, greatest present and future concernement of all other to the whole English Nation, at this very instant most intollerably opprested, grieved by them; directly sweeping away all their Fundamental Right of Property, and consequentially all their Liberty of person, Laws, Charters, at once, and that in perpetuity, beyond all hopes of Future redemption, if not timely

timely prevented by the Universality, Body of the Realm, or their Trustees.

The first of them is, the present imposition, and continuall  
of the strange, oppresive, monstrous, general high **Tax of EX-  
CISE**, imposed on most native and forreign Commodities  
throughout **England**, and its **Diminions**; which as it was a  
meere Stranger to all our **Ancestors**, and those now living, till  
within these few years; so it was no sooner projected by some e-  
vil **Malignant Jesuit Counsellors** about the late **King**, but it (a) See my  
was (a) presently condemned, and crushed in the very shell, Declaration  
when first intended to be set on foot in **England** by **King Charles**, and **Protestation**  
( with the advise and consent of his privie Council at **White-  
Hall** ) by a **Commission** under the **Great Seal of England**, dated  
the last of **February**, 3 **Carols**, issued to thirty three **Lords of**  
**his Majesties Privie Council and others**: which authorized, and  
commanded them to **raise monies BY IMPOSITIONS OR**  
**OTHERWISE, as they in their wisdoms should finde most**  
**convenient; and that only for these publike uses, THE DE-  
FENCE OF THE KING, KINGDOM, PEOPLE, and of**  
**the Kings Friends and Allies beyond the Seas, then in such**  
**imminent danger, that WITHOUT EXTREAMEST HA-  
ZARD OF THE KING, KINGDOM, PEOPLE,**  
**KINGS Friends and Allies, it could admit of no longer de-  
lay. In which INEVITABLE NECESSITY, form and**  
**circumstance must rather be dispensed with than the sub-  
stance lost. The Commissioners being therupon specially in-  
joyed, to be diligent in the Service, and not fail therein, as**  
**they tender his Majesties Honour, and THE SAFETY OF**  
**THE KING and PEOPLE.** This Commission was no soo-  
ter discovered, but it was presently complained of by the whole  
**Commons House**, in the Parliament, of 3 **Caroli**, and upon  
**Conference with the Lords** it was immediately Vested, adjudg-  
ed by both **Houses**, without one dissenting voyce, **TO BEE**  
**( EX DIAMETHRO) AGAINST LAW, and CONTRARY**  
**TO THE PETITION OF RIGHTS**; after  
which, it was cancelled as such in the Kings own presence, by  
his consent, order, and then sent cancelled to both **Houses**, for  
their satisfaction, before ever it was put in execution, and all

Warrants for, and memorials of it cancelled, damned, destroyed; the Commons further urging, That the Projector thereof might be found out by strict inquiry, and EXEMPLARILY PUNISHED (as the Parliament Journal attests) notwithstanding all the specious pretences, of inevitable necessity, imminent danger, and the defence, safety of the whole Kingdom, People, King, and his forreign Protestant Friends and Allies (then in greater real danger, than any now appearing) This Original Parliamentary Doom, Judgement against that New Monster of Exeise, was ratified, approved, preslid by both Houses of Parliament, in the Cales of Ship-money, and the Commission of Array, as you may read at large in Mr. Oliver St. Johns Speech and Declaration, delivered at a Conference of both Houses concerning Ship-money, 14 January, 1640. (printed by the Commons Order) p. 13. to 20. and, The Lords and Commons second Declaration against the Commission of Array. Exact collection, p. 884, 885. from which they then drew this positive conclusion (fit to be now considered by our New Government, and the whole Nation) THAT

TO DEFEND THE KINGDOM IN TIME OF IMMINENT DANGER, IS NO SUFFICIENT CAUSE (for the King and his Council, much less then for those who condemned, suppressed them for Tyrants, and Oppression of the People) TO LAY ANY TAX OR CHARGE UPON THE SUBJECTS WITHOUT THEIR CONSENT IN PARLIAMENT. Yet the whole House of Commons was so zealous against this Dreadful Devil of Exeise, that in their Remonstrance of the state of the Kingdom, 15 Decemb, 1641. Exact Collection, p. 3 4, 6. they expressly brand, censure, the first Attempt to introduce it, for A MALIGNANT and PERNICIOUS DESIGN, TO SUBVERT THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWS and PRINCIPLES OF GOVERNMENT, upon which the JUSTICE OF THIS KINGDOM WAS FORMERLY ESTABLISHED; proceeding from JESUITED COVNCLES, BEING MOST ACTIVE and PREVAILING; yea, for AN UNJUST and PERNICIOUS ATTEMPT, TO EXORT GREAT PAYMENTS FROM THE SUBJECTS. which was to be

\* Exact Collection, p. 886.

Nota.

Nota.

accompanied ( as now it is ) with Billited Souldiers in all parts of the Kingdom, and the concomitant of German ( as now of English ) HORSE, That the \* LAND MIGHT EVER, SUBJECT WITH FEAR, or BE ENFORCED WITH RIGOUR, TO SUCH ARBITRARY CONTRIBUTIONS AS SHOULD BE REQUIRED OF THEM. And when *some* rumours were first spread abroad, that the COMMONS HOUSE INTENDED TO LAY EXCISE UPON PEWTER AND OTHER COMMODITIES; they were so sensible of the injustice and odiousness thereof, that they thereupon published a special Declaration, printed 8 Octob. 1642. Exact Collection, p. 638. wherein they not only disclaim, renounce any such intention, but branded those Reports and Rumours, for FALSE and SCANDALOUS ASPERSIONS, raised and cast upon the House BY MALIGNANT and ILL-AFFECTED PERSONS, TENDING MUCH TO THE DISSERVICE OF THE PARLIAMENT: and Ordered, That the AVTHORS OF THEM should be inquired after, apprehended, and brought to the House TO RECEIVE CONDIGNE PUNISHMENT. After which this Excise being notwithstanding this Disclaimer, and much publick, private opposition against it, set on foot by some swaying Members ( upon a pretence of necessity for support of the Army ) to the great Oppression, and Discontent of the People; The Generall and general Council of Officers and Souldiers of THE ARMY themselves, were so sensible of this illegal oft-condemned New grievance, that in the Heads of their Proposals, and particulars of their Desires, in order to the clearing and securing of the Rights and Liberties of the Kingdom, tended to the Commissioner of Parliament residing with the Army, the first of August, 1647. ( printed in their Book of Declarations, p. 118, &c. published by their own, and the Lords House special Order ) they made this one principall Desire to the Parliament; That the EXCISE may be taken off from such Commodities, whereof the poor of the Land do ordinarily live, and A CERTAIN TIME TO BE LIMITED FOR TAKING OFF THE WHOLE, Yet notwithstanding all these Judgements and Orders.

\* And is not this its present  
sad slavish condition?

Nota.

\* Do they not  
so on Beer,  
Salt, and other  
Manufactures,  
for which they,  
now pay Ex-  
cise?

cries against it; some of those very persons who thus publickly branded it, both in the *Parliament House* and *Army*; by irregular paper *Ordinances* (as they intitle them) dated 24 December, 1653. March 17. 1653. and May 4. 1654. have by their own *Self-derived supertranscendent Authority*, without, yea against the Peoples consents, or any Authority from Parliament, imposed, continued *Excise upon our own Inland, and Forreign Commodities*, in very high proportions, from the twenty fourth of *March 1654*, till the twenty fourth of *March 1655*. And (which is most observable) prescribed it to be levied, by *putting the Parties to an (EX OFFICIO) OATH* against themselves; by *Fines, Forfeitures, SEQVESTRATIONS, and SALES OF THE REFUSERS, OPPOSERS, PERSONAL and REAL ESTATES, DISSTRESSES, BREAKING UP OF THE PARTIES HOVSES SEISVRES OF THEIR GOODS, IMPRISONMENT OF THE PERSONS OF ALL SUCH WHO SHALL HINDER OR OPPOSE THE MINISTERS, OR OFFICERS EMPLOYED IN LEVYING, or distraining for the same, BY LOCKING UP THE DOORS, or OTHERWISE*. And by these their *unparalleled Edicts* they further order, *That the Officers of Excise, BOTH DAY AND NIGHT, shall be permitted free entrance into ALL ROOMES and PLACES WHATSOEVER THEY SHALL DEMAND, in Brewers, Sope-boylers, and others Houses; under pain of forfeiture of fifty pounds for every refusall (by colour whereof all mens Housles may be robbed, plundered, and their throats cut by Theeves and Robbers, pretending themselves Excise-men, Souldiers, authorised to make such Searches, as many of late have been.) And they with all their assistants shall bee kept indemnified in ALL CAUSES RELATING TO THE EXCISE, from time to time, against all Sues or Actions brought, or other molestations, against them by the Parties grieved; who are \* usually Fined, Imprisoned, enforced to pay Costs of Sues, only for Juing for relief) yea (which I cannot think of without horrour and amazement) ALL COVRTS*

\* Witness Mr. Cosy amongst others.

Nota.

COVTS OF JUSTICE OF THIS COMMON-WEALTH, and ALL JUDGES and JUSTICES OF THE SAME, SHERIFS, COVSELLORS, ATTURNIES, SOLICITORS, and ALL OTHER PERSONS, are thereby expressly required, to conform themselves accordingly, (in all things) WITHOUT ANY OPPOSITION OR DISPVTE WHATSOEVER; as the precise words of their *Ordinance of 17 March, 1653.* proclaim to all the Nation. Which declares further, *That IT IS NECESSARY to provide A CONTINUAL SVPPPLY for the carrying on the weighty Affairs of this Common-wealth OVT OF THIS REVENVE OF EXCISE.* And do not these Clauses, (compared with the 27. &c 29. *Articles of their Instrument,*) clearly discover, a fixed Resolution in these new *Legislators,* to continue, and perpetuate upon the whole Nation, this importable Grievance of *Excise,* from year to year, without intermission or end, to be leaved by the means aforesaid? to hinder all and every the *Freemen of England,* from endeavouring to free or exempt themselves, or their Posterities from it hereafter, by any *Suit, Action, Habeas Corpus, or other legal remedy in any Court of Justice whatsoever?* yea peremptorily, positively to prohibit, enjoin all *Courts of Justice, Judges, Justices, Sheriffs, Counsellours, Attornies, Solicitors, with all other persons of this Common-wealth,* both for the present and future Ages, to give them the least legal assistance, advice, or relief against the same, or against any Officers, or Assistants which shall forcibly leavie it by *distrels, Fines, Imprisonments, Confiscation of Goods, Sequestrations, Sales of their personal or real Estates, or otherwise?*

I appeal then (in the behalf of all the *Freeborn People of England*) the Souls and Consciences of these new *Ordinance makers,* with all the *Excusioners* of them in any kinde, before all the Tribunals of Heaven and Earth, whether they have not by these their *Dismal Ordinances,* more desperatly, irrecoverably, totally, finally (as much as in them lies) undermined, subversed; and quite blown up at once, all the Foundations of our hereditary Fundamentall Properties, Liberties, Laws for eternity, and levelled them to the dust, then the worst of all our

our Kings or former Council-tables ever did? Deprived the whole Nation, and every particular Free-man in it, of all future benefit of our Laws, Statutes and Courts of Justice, for their justrelief against this intolerable Oppression; and thereby reduced us to the condition of the most slavish, captivated, fettered Bond-slaves and conquered Vassals under heaven, without any visible means or hopes of future enfranchisement, under a pretext of fighting for, maintaining, protecting, enlarging our former properties and freedomes &c to a more miserable, lordid, servile condition, than either we or our Ancestors sustained under the worst of all our Kings and their most pernicious Counsellors; who never in any age attempted, either to make or impose such Extravagant enslaving Ordinances or Excises, with such strange penalties, Forfeitures, Imprisonments, Sequestrations, sales, & most unrighteous Monstrous Inhibitions of all legal suites, & means for theirrelief in Courts of Justice, as they have done: King Charles himself ( though condemned, beheaded by them for the worst of Tyrants and Oppressors) permitting his Subjects free Liberty, to dispute the Legality of Fines for Knight-hood, Ship money, Tonnage, Poundage, Loans, Excise and other Impositions not ——————only in his Parliaments, ( where they were fully debated without restraint, and Laws passed against them afterwards by his own Royall assent thereto ) but likewise in all his other Courts, where they were first brought in question. Yet now in our NewFree State, under these greatest pretended Patrons of our Laws and Liberties, all Courts, Judges, Justices, and other Officers must conform to these illegall Impositions, and their tyrannicall waies of enforcement, without any opposition or dispute whatsoever; and all Counsellors, Attorneys, Solicitors and others, must neither argue, nor advise, nor act, in any kinde against them. And is this the glorious old antient English Liberty, Freedome, Property, Law, and free course of Justice, wee have spent so many millions of Treasure, so many years of publique Consultations, warres, Prayers, Fastes, Tears, and such Oceans of precious christian Protestant English blood, inviolably to maintain and perpetuate to posterity? If any Free-born English men whatsoever dare publiquely avante it, let them do it at the perill of their infamy, execration in all

See the Arguments concerning them in Mr. Hamblins and others cases.

future

future ages, yea of their own heads and souls. If they can not but now absolutely disavow it, let them with shame and indignation disclaim, renounce such illegall Ordinances, Excises, as most detestable both to God and all true-born English free men.

The 2 is, The present continuing Impositions of *Customes Tonnage and Poundage upon Goods, Aserchandizes imported and exported, without any grant thereof by Parliament*, by a new Printed Paper, entituled, an *Ordinance of March, 23 1653.* thus peremptorily imposing them without any Prologue or Inducement to satisfy the people either in Equity or Justice, much lesse in their Legality in respect of those who thus impose them for sundry years yet to come. Be it ordained by his highness, the Lord Protector, with the advise and consent of the Councell, that one *Act of Parliament* ( though no *Act at all by any known Laws, Statutes, Law-books, Records, Customes or Constitutions of the Realm, but a mere Nullity* ) entituled, an *Act for the Continuallation of the Customes, until the 26 of March, 1653,* and all clauses and powers therein contained are, and ARE HEREBY CONTINUED, and SHALL and Lords.

DO STAND IN FULL FORCE UNTILL THE 26 DAY OF MARCH in the year of our Lord 1653, &c. By which these New Legislators, by their own inherent Superlative Power, presume to impose this Tax upon the whole Nation, ( without any grant in Parliament ) for full 5 years space, not only contrary to the \* Presidents in all former Kings reigns, who never claimed nor received it, but by speciall grant in Parliament; but likewise contrary to this memorable Remonstrance, made by the whole House of Commons in the Parliament of 3 Caroli, never yet Printed to my knowledge.)

Most gracious Sovereign, your Majesties most loyall and dutifull Subjects, ( the Commons in this present Parliament Assembled, ) being in nothing more carefull than of the Honour and Prosperity, of your Majesty and the Kingdome, which they know doth much depend upon that union and relation betwixt your Majesty and your people do with much sorrow apprehend, that by reason of the incertainty of their continuall together, the unexpected interruptions which have been cast

\* See Cooks 4. Justit. c. 1.  
Brooks Parliament 4. 76 42.  
and Rastal. 107. and my  
Plea for the  
Taxes.

upon them, and the shortness of time in which your Majesty hath determined to end this Session; they cannot bring to maturity and perfection divers busineses of weight, which they have taken into their consideration and resolution, as most important for the common good.

Amongst other things, they have taken into especial care the preparing of a Bill for the granting to your Majesty such a Subidy of Tonnage and Poundage, as might uphold your Profit and Revenne, in as ample manner as their just care and respect of Trade (wherein not only the prosperity, but even the life of the Kingdom doth consist) would permit. But being a work which will require much time and preparation, by Conference with your Majesties Officers, and with the Merchants, not only of London, but of other remote parts; they finde it not possible to bee accomplished at this time; wherefore considering it will be much more prejudicial to the Right of the Subject, if your Majesty should continue to receive the same without Authority of Law, after the determination of a Session, then if there had been a recess by Adjournment only (in which case that intended Grant would have related to the first day of the Parliament) and assuring themselves, That your Majesty is resolved to observe that your royal Answer, which you have made to the Petition of Right of both Houses of Parliament; yet doubting lest your Majesty may be mis-informed concerning this particular case, as if you might continue to take those Subsidies of Tonnage and Poundage, and other Impositions of Merchants, without breaking that Answer; they are forced, by their duty which they owe to your Majesty, and to those whom they represent, to declare, THAT THERE OUGHT NOT AN IMPOSITION TO BE LAID UPON THE GOODS OF MERCHANTS EXPORTED OR IMPORTED WITHOUT COMMON CONSENT BY ACT OF PARLIAMENT, WHICH IS THE RIGHT AND INHERITANCE OF YOUR SUBJECTS, FOUNDED NOT ONLY UPON THE MOST ANTI-ENY AND ORIGINAL CONSTITUTION OF THIS KINGDOM, BUT OFTEN CONFIRMED AND

Nota.

Nota.

AND DECLARED IN DIVERS STATUTE LAWS? And for the better manifestation thereof, may it please your Majesty to understand, That although your royal Predecessors, the Kings of this Realm have often had such Subsidies, and Impositions granted unto them upon divers occasions, especially for the guarding of the Seas, and safeguard of Merchants, yet the Subjects have been ever careful to use such Cautions and limitations in those Grants, as might prevent any Claim to be made, that such Subsidies do proceed from duty, and not from the free gift of the Subject, and that they have heretofore limited a time in such Grants, and for the most part but short, as for a year, or two; and if it were continued longer, they have sometimes directed a certain space of resension or intermission, that so the Right of the Subject might be more evident. At other times it hath been granted upon occasion of Warre for certain numbers of years, with Proviso, that if the Warre were ended in the mean time, then the grant should cease. And of course it hath been sequestred into the hands of some Subjects to be employed for guarding of the Coasts; and it is acknowledged by the ordinary Answers of your Majesties Predecessors, in their Assents to the Bills of Subsidy of Tonnage and Poundage, that it is of the nature of other Subsidies, proceeding from the good will of the Subject. Very few of your Predecessors had it for life, until the reign of Henry 7. \* who was so farre from conceiving he had any right thereto, that although he granted Commissions for collecting certain Duties and Customs due by Law, yet he made no Commission for receiving the Subsidy of Tonnage and Poundage, until the same was granted to him in Parliament.

Since his time, all the Kings and Queens of this Realm have had the like Grants for life, by the free love and good will of the Subject; and whenever the people have been grieved by laying any Impositions or other Charges upon their Goods and Merchandizes without authority of Law, (which hath been very seldom) yet upon complaint in Parliament they have been forthwith relieved; saving in the time of your royal Father, who having through ill counseil raised the Roses

Nota.

\* Though he came in by the Sword, as a kind of Conqueror,

Nota.

Nota.

of Merchandizes to that height at which they now are, yet he was pleased so farre to yeld to the complaint of his people, as to offer, that if the value of these Impositions which he had set, might be made good unto him, he would bind himself, and his Heirs by Act of Parliament, never to lay any other; which offer the Commons at that time, in regard of the great burthen, did not think fit to yeld unto.

Nevertheless your loyal Commons in this Parliament, out of their especiall zeal to your Service, and speciall regard of your pressing occasions, have taken into their considerations; so to frame a Grant of Subsidy of Tonnage and Poundage to your Majestie, that both you might have been better enabled for the defence of your Realms, and your Subjects by being secure from all undue Charges, be the more encouraged cheerfully to proceed in their course of Trade; by the encrease whereof your Majesties profit, and likewise the strength of the Kingdom would be very much augmented. But not being now able to accomplish this their desire, there is no <sup>\*</sup> course left unto them without manifest breach of their Duty, both to your Majestie and their Country, save only to make this humble Declaration, THAT THE RECEIVING OF TONNAGE and POUNDAGE and OTHER IMPOSITIONS NOT GRANTED BY PARLIAMENT, IS A BREACH OF

THE FUNDAMENTAL LIBERTIES OF THIS KINGDOM, and CONTRARY TO YOVR MAJESTIES ROYAL ANSWER TO THE SAID PETITION OF RIGHT; And therefore they do most humbly beseech your Majestie to forbear any further receiving of the same, and not to take it in ill part from those of your Majesties loving Subjects, WHO SHALL REFUSE TO MAKE PAYMENT OF ANY SVCH CHARGES WITHOUT WARRANT OF LAW DEMANDED. And as by this forbearance, your most excellent Majestie shall manifest unto the World your ROYAL JUSTICE IN THE OBSERVATION OF YOVR LAWS; so they doubt not hereafter, at the time appointed for their coming again, they shall have occasion to express their great desire to advance your Majesties HONOUR and PROFIT;

\* And are not all the Commons Merchants, Facemen of England bound to use the same course, and make the same Declaration now?

Nota.

\* And can our present Gua-  
rdaes take it in ill part if we refuse to pay them now, be-  
ing demand'd without War-  
rant of a Law, and the re-  
ceivers of them in a Premu-  
nire by ex-  
preis Act of  
Parliament  
16 Carolis made  
since this Re-  
monstrance.

The

The King dissolving this Parliament on a sudden, and continuing to take *Tonnage and Poundage* by his Royal Prerogative without any Act of Parliament, sundry (a) Merchants upon (z) Alderman Chambers, Mr. the Commons Remonstrance, refused to pay the same; where-  
upon their Goods were seized, of which they complaining in Parliament, 16 Caroli, were Voted full Reparations against the Customers, with Damages for the same. And to prevent the Kings Claim thereunto by right; with all future Demands and Collections thereof from the Subject without grant in Parliament, they Declared and Enabled by three special Acts of Parliament 16, & 17, Caroli, That IT IS and HATH BEEN THE ANTIET RIGHT OF THE SUBJECTS OF THIS REALM; That NO SUBSIDY, CUSTOME, IM-  
POST, OR OTHER CHARGE'S WHATSOEVER OUGHT OR MAY BE LAID OR IMPOSED UPON ANY MERCHANTISE EXPORTED OR IMPOR-  
TED BY SUBJECTS, DENIZENS OR ALI-  
ENS, WITHOUT COMMON CONSENT IN PAR-  
LIAMENT, and that if any Customer, Controller, or any other Officer, or Person, should take or receive, or cause to bee taken or received the said Subsidy, or any other Impost upon any Merchandise whatsoever, exported or imported, except the same be due, by Grant IN PARLIAMENT, shall incur the penalties and forfeitures OF A PREMVNIRE, to the which the King gave his Royal Assent. And to prevent any future prescription thereunto by the King, they discontinued it for some time, and then granted it specially from Month to Month, or some short space with sundry limitations, and the penalty of A PREMVNIRE if otherwise received, by several New Acts of Parliament, to which the King gave his assent. These Acts the King himself in his Proclamation of the sixteenth of December, in the eighteenth year of his reign, titles, THE FENCES OF THE SUBJECTS PROPERTY, received from Us, and understood by Us, as one of THE GREATEST GRACES THE CROWN EVER CON-  
FERRED ON THE SUBJECT; And by that Proclama-  
tion, he prohibited all his Subjects, both the payment and receipt of any Monies for Customs, or other Maritime Duties, contrary

Nota.

to this *Act*, by any *Ordinance* of both *Houses of Parliament*; under pain of a **PREMUNIRE**, and of being likewise proceeded against as ill-affected persons to the *Peace of the Kingdome*.

Whereupon the *Lords and Commons* in their answer to this *Proclamation*; though they declared; that the intent and meaning of that penall *Clause* of a **PREMUNIRE** and other *Forfeitures* (in these new *Statutes*, which likewise disable every person, *Customer, Officers* who should take or receive, or cause to be taken or received any such *Subsidy* or *imposition* upon any *Merchandize*, during his life, to sue or implead any persons, in any *action reall, mixt or personal* in any *Court whatsoever*,) was only to restrain the *Crown*, from imposing any *duty or payment* on the *Subiects*, without their *consent in Parliament*: and that it was not intended to extend to any case whereto the **LORDS and COMMONS GIVE THEIR ASSENT IN PARLIAMENT** ( which they never did to this *New White-ball Ordinance*, nor the pretended *Act* recited in it, therefore the *imposers* and *receivers* of it by *virtue* thereof, without such *assent* in *Parliament*, are within the *penalties* of the *abovesaid Statutes*: ) Yet to avoid the danger of a *Pramunire* in their *Officers*, by exacting it only by an *Ordinance of both Houses*, without a *speciall Act of Parliament*; they did by their first \* *Ordinances*, *impose and demand* *Customes, Tonnage* *Poundage* and new *Impots*, not as a *Legal Duty*, but only **BY WAY OF LOANE**; till the *Act of Parliament* for their future continuance should be *assented to* by the *King*: as, their *Declaration* of 31 *December 1642*. and their *Ordinance* of the same date, concerning the *subsidy of Tonnage and Poundage* attest. By what coulor of *Law, Justice, Right*, this ancient birth-right of all *English Subjects*, so lately declared by three *Acts of Parliament*, to which most of our late and present *White-ball Grandees* were parties, comes to bee lost and forfeited by our *concessions* to preserve it; or how the *Customes, Impots of Tonnage, and Poundage*, can bee now imposed, continued on, or exacted from the *Subjects* by any *Powers, Officers, or persons whatsoever*, and levied by severest *penalties, Forfeitures, Imprisonments, Seisures*, by *pretext* of this *White-ball*

Exact Collection p.790. to 797.

White-hal Ordinance, (though no waies granted by common consent and Act of Parliament,) without incurring a *Præsummire*; and forementioned penalties, disabilities; or without subverting the *Fundamental Liberty, Property, Franchises, Laws, Statutes of the whole English Nation*, in a farte higher degree then ever in former ages, I cannot yet discern; and all our *New Governours, Merchants, Customers, Officers and other persons*, who have any *Cordial affection, Love, Zeal to their own or the peoples hereditary Rights and Priviledges*, may do well to *demurre in Law upon it*, till they can satisfy their own and other mens consciences therein, to prevent the dangerous consequences of such an ill president to posterity. In the Parliament of 1 H. 4. rot. Parl. n. 32, 33, 34. 36. These were the principall Articles of impeachment exhibited against King Richard the Second; for which hee was forced to depose himself, as unfit to Govern, and resign up his Crown to King Henry the Fourth.

\* *That whereas the King of England out of the profits of the Realms, and the Patrimony belonging to his Crown, might live honestly without oppression of his people; so as the Kingdome were not burdened with the extraordinary expences of warre,* See Historia Anglicanæ Londini. 1652.  
*that this King during the Truces between the Realms and the Adversaries thereof; gave and squandered away a great part of the Crown-Lands to unworthy persons, and therewithal exacted almost every year, so many Taxes and Grants of Ayde from his Subjects of the Realms, that hee thereby* Col. 2750, 2951. Halls Chronicle p. 7. 8. John Trussell p. 23. R. 2. p 46. Grafton p. 401.

GREATLY and TOO EXCESSIVELY OPPRESSED HIS PEOPLE, TO THE IMPOVERISHING OF HIS REALM. *That the same King being unwilling to keep and defend the just Laws and Customes of his Realm, and to do according to his pleasure, whatsoever should suite with his desires, frequently when the Laws of his Realm were expounded and declared to him by the Justices and others of his Council, who requested him to administer Justice according to those Laws, said expressly with an austere and frowning Countenance, THAT THE LAWS WERE HIS more suo, AFTER his own MANER; and sometimes, THAT THEY WERE IN HIS OWN BREAST, and THAT HEE ALONE COULD ALTER and MAKE THE LAWS.*

LAWS OF HIS REALM. And being seduced with this opinion, he permitted not Justice to be done to very many of his Leige people, but compelled very many to cease from the prosecution of common Justice. That when as afterwards in his Parliament certain Statutes were made, which might always bind, till they were specially repealed by another Parliament, the same King desiring to enjoy so great Liberty, that none of these Statutes might so binde him, but that he might execute and do according to the pleasure of his own Will, which hee could not do of right; subtilly procured such a Petition to be presented to him in his Parliament, in the behalfe of the Commons of his Realm, and to be granted to him in the general; THAT HE MIGHT BE SO FREE AS ANY OF HIS PROGENITORS WERE BEFORE HIM. By colour of which Petition and Grant, he frequently did, and commanded to bee done, MANY THINGS CONTRARY TO THE SAID STATUTES NOT REPEALED, GOING AGAINST THEM EXPRESLY, and WITTINGLY, AGAINST HIS OATH AT HIS CORONATION. That although by the Statutes and Customs of his Realm, in the summoning of every Parliament, his people in every County of the Realm ought to be free, to elect and depute Knights for the said Countries to sit in Parliament, both TO RECEIVE their GRIEVANCES, and TO PROSECUTE REMEDIES THEREUPON, AS IT SHALL SEEM EXPEDIENT TO THEM; yet the said King, that he might in his Parliament be able to obtain the effect of his rash Will, frequently directed his Mandates to his Sheriffs, that they should cause to come to his Parliament CERTAIN PERSONS NAMED BY THE KING HIMSELF, AS KNIGHTS OF THE SHIRE; which Knights verily favouring the said King, he might easily endue, as he frequently did, sometimes by divers threats and terrors, and sometimes by gifts, TO CONSENT TO THOSE THINGS WHICH WERE VERY PREJUDICIAL TO THE REALM, and VERY BURDENOME TO THE PEOPLE; and specially, TO GRANT TO THE SAID KING A SUBSIDY FOR CERTAIN YEARS, TO THE OPPRESSING OF HIS

His People overmuch. That although the Lands and Tenements, Goods and Chattels of every Freeman, by the Laws of the Realm used in all former ages past, ought not to be seized, unless they had forfeited; Yet notwithstanding, the said King purposing & endeavouring to enervate these Laws, in the presence of very many of the Lords and Commons of this Realm frequently said and affirmed, That the Life, Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels of every one of his Subjects, are at his will and pleasure, without any Forfeiture ( by the known Laws ) which is altogether contrary to the Laws & customs of the Realm aforesaid. Whether all these high Misdemeanors charged against King Richard, have not been revived, and acted over and over both by words and deeds in a farre higher degree than ever he was guilty of them, by some late, present Whitehall Grandees, Army-Officers, New Instrument-makers, Legititors, and Imposers of Excises, Customs, Imposts, Tonnage, Poundage, Contributions for many years yet to come; and of that constant Annual Revenue projected, intended by them in their 27 Article; I remit to their own judgements, consciences, and our whole Kingdom to resolve, and what they demere for such extravagant high offences, for which he lost Crown and Regal power, let others determine.

The 3. particular, is their late incumbent *Imposition of 6. Moneths new Contribution*, by a mere Self-enacted Whitehall Jurisdiction, without any consent, grant, in or by the People in Parliament, by that they intitle, *An Ordinance of the 8. of June 1654* beginning thus ( in a most imperial Stile, transcending all former Acts of Parliament, granting or imposing any Subsidies ) without any Prologue to sweeten it, or court the people to its ready payment.

Be it Ordained and Enacted by his Highness the Lord Protector, with the consent of his Council, and it is hereby Ordained, That towards the maintenance of the Armies and Parties of this Commonwealth An Assess-  
ment of one Hundred and Twenty Thousand Pounds

per Mensem for Three Moneths, commencing the 24 of June, 1654 and ending the 29 of Sept. following, shall be Taxed, Levied, Collected and Paid in England and Wales in such sort as is hereafter expressed. The full sum of the said Three Monthes Assiment of One hundred and twenty thousand pounds by the Month, to be at once wholsly collected and paid in to the Receivers Generall at or before the tenth day of October next, &c. The Levying thereof upon the refusers hath been by distress of Goods by Souldiers, Troopers, and quartering them on the refusers till payment, and double the value many times paid to, and exacted by the Souldiers for their pains; adjudged (even by some of our New Grandees Votes who prescribe such Taxes and wayes of levying them) to be No less then High Treason, and levying Warre in Strafford's case, for which principally he was condemned, and lost his head on Tower Hill, as a Traitor.

In this New Whitehall Tax without a Parliament (intended as a leading President to bind the whole Nation in perpetuity, if now submitted to, as the 27 Article intimates) there is a double violation, subversion of the Fundamental Laws and Properties of the Nation in the Highest degree. The first, is by the reviving, imposing of \* Ship-mony on the whole Realm, and all Inland Countries, as well as Maritime, for the Maintenance of the Navies by Sea, (which should be maintained only by the Customs) and that in a farre higher proportion than the Shipmoy imposed by Writs by our late beheaded King; amounting to no less than Forty thousand pounds per Mensem at least, by way of Contribution alone, besides the Customs, Tonnage, Poundage and Excise paid towards it.

This Imposition of *Shipmoy*, by the late King, (though ratified with the advise and consent of his Council, many colourable Presidents, Records in all former ages, and the precedent Resolution of all his Judges, under their hands, as just, and legally imposed in case of Necessity and Publike danger only, without consent in Par-

\* See Mr. St. Johns Argument at his Attander. p. 36. to 52.

\* See Judge Crooks, & Judge Hiltons printed Arguments, & my Humble Remonstrance against the Illegal Tax of Shipmoy.

Parliament) together with the Judgement and Proceedings of the Judges in the Eschequer Chamber in justification thereof, were in the last Parliament, after solemn debate, by the Votes and Judgements of both Houses, on the 20. Ian. and 26 February, resolved (Nemine contradicente) To be contrary to the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, contrary to the Rights and Proper- ties of the Subjects of this Realm, contrary to former Judgements in Parliament, contrary to the great Charter and to the Petition of Right: and voted to be so declared by the Judges at the Assizes in the several Counties; the same to be entered and enrolled in the several Counties by the Clerks of the Assizes. After which, it was for ever damned by a special Act of Parliament, to which the King himself gave his Royal assent, (afterwards cited and enforced by both Houses. Exact Collection p. 886. 887, in the case of the Array.) And those Judges who argued, That the King might lawfully impose Shipmoney on the Subjects, without a Parliament in cases of Danger and Necessity, of which they affirmed him to be the sole Judge; were by all impeached by the House of Commons of High Treason, for their Opinions of theirs; whereby they trayterously and wickedly endeavoured to subvert The Fundamental Laws and established Government of the Realm of England, and instead thereof to set up an Arbitrary and Tyrannical Government against Law; of which at large before. How any present Powers or Persons then, can either impose, justify, levy, enforce it upon any Pretext of Necessity, or publique Danger, on the whole Nation, after all these late Resolutions, Judgements, Votes, Impeachments, and a special Act of Parliament so fresh in memory (especially such who were parties to them) without incurring the self-same Impeachments and guilt, as these Shipmoney Judges did, or a severer Censure then they sustained, let their own Consciences, and those who may one day prove their Judges, resolve them at leasure, being past my skill to doe it?

Printed at  
the end of  
Judge *Hutton's*  
Argument, &  
amongst the  
Statutes of 16  
Carol.

\* Chap. I. p.  
Diurnal Occu-  
pations &  
Speeches, p.  
191. to 265.

The 2. is, By the imposing of a direct heavy Tax, Tallyage, and Monthly contribution, and that only ( for the Maintenance of such a Land Army, which hath offered force unto the Members of both Houses, subverted, destroyed that Parliament, Government, Laws, Libertie, for whose preservation they were specially raised, Commissioned, engaged ) without, yea against the Peoples assent in Parliament: which no King of England, with the advice and consent of his Council, had ever any Right or Power to doe, or audacity enough to attempt, no not *William the Conqueror, Crute, Henry the 4th, Edward the 4th, or Henry the 7th*, who came principally by power of the Sword, to their Sovereign Regall Authoritie. By what Justice, Power, Legal Right, any other person or persons whatsoever, who are neither rightfull Kings, nor Parliaments of England in their own or others repute, can either impose, levy, exact such extravagant Heavy Taxes, Contributions, from the exhausted Free-born People of England, ( especially being now pretended new Free State, ) against all our Fundamental Lawes, Statutes, Franchises, Charters, Properties, Liberties, Records, Parliamentary Judgements, their own late Remonstrances, Declarations, Votes, the Presidents of all former ages, yea of all our Kings coming in by the Sword to their Thrones, let the Imposers of them seriously advise, as they will answer it at their utmost peril to God, Men, and the whole English Nation; who expected better things from them, even a total final exemption from all such illegal Burthens, after all their late Wars, Agonies, Expences, to redeem and preserve their Lawes, Liberties, Estates, Properties, Posterities, from such exorbitant Oppressions, diametrically contrary to all the forecited Judgements, Resolutions, Remonstrances, Statutes, Votes, Presidents, and sundry others, which I shall hereafter insist on in the third Chapter of this Treatise to which I must refer you: And shall we not then adventure a distress,

stresse, a Prison, quartering upon, or any other Dutesse, yea Death it self, rather than voluntarily submit our selves and Posterities backs thereto, when as we spend our Bloods, Lives, Treasures, against lesser, easier, Royal Impositions? How shall we answer it to God, Men, or our enslaved Posterities, if we now most safely, un worthily submit thereto in perpetuity, without the least legal, strenuous, publick oppression or debate of its legallity.

If any here allege (as some men do) in justification of these three, (or rather four) forecited kinds of illegal *universal Taxes*, imposed, levied, on the whole Nation, without consent of Parliament; That they are all warranted by the Instrument of the new Government, Article 27, 28, 29. That a constant yearly revenue shall be raised, settled and established, for maintaining Ten Thousand Horse and Dragoons, and Twenty Thousand Foot in England, Scotland, and Ireland for the Defence and security thereof, and also for a convenient number of Ships for guarding the Seas, besides two hundred thousand pounds per annum, for destroying other necessary charges, for Administration of Justice, and other expences of the Government, which Revenue shall be raised by the Customes, and such other ways and means which shall be agreed upon. By the Lord Protector and Council; and shall not be taken away, or diminished, nor the way agreed upon for the raising of the same altered, but by consent of the Lord Protector and the Parliament. That the said yearly Revenue shall be paid into the publick Treasury, and issued out for the uses aforesaid. That in case there shall not be cause hereafter to keep up so great a Defence at Land or Sea, but that there be an abatement made thereof, The summe which shall be saved thereby, shall remain in bank for the Publick service, &c. All which they, in the True state of the Case of the Commonwealth, p. 43, 44, commend, for a most excellent Provision, A constant Revenue, A Publick Bank or Treasury upon all occasions, &c. which they intend

to perpetuate on the whole Kingdom, without end or abatement, as well in times of *peace, safety, as of war and danger*. Therefore the *Protector* and his *Council at Whitehall* in pursuance hereof, may lawfully impose (by virtue of these Articles) both *Excise, Customs, Tonnage, Poundage, Ship-money and contributions*, for these ends upon our three whole Kingdoms; and all the *Freeborn English* by printed *Ordinances* of their own, in what Proportions, and for what time they please (yea and for perpetuity) without consent or grant in Parliaments, and restrain all future Parliaments, both from taking away, or diminishing them, or altering the way agreed on for their raising, without their *Protector's* consent; hereto; (as the express words run, and their practise yet expounds them: ) notwithstanding all former Laws, Statutes, Charters, Resolutions, Judgements, Remonstrances, Oathes, Vowes, Declarations, Presidents) either in or out of Parliament) to the contrary.

*Answer.*

To this I answer, first, that I cannot but stand amazed to hear any Army-Officers, Soldiers, Lawyers, or persons in present trust or power, who bear the name or hearts of *English Freeman, Saints, Christians, Lovers, Patriots or Protectors of their Native Country of England, its Parliaments, Laws, and Liberties*, to make such a stupendious irrational objection, as this, which justifies all the exorbitant *Opinions, Proceedings, Taxes, Oppressions, Impositions*, of our late beheaded King, *Strafford, Canterbury, the Ship-money Judges, old Whitehall Council Table*, yea all our other former Kings, and their evil *Counsellors* most irregular *Exaction* of money in all ages from *Brute* till now; and will render the very worst of all our Kings, if compared with our late and present *Tax-masters*, and pretended *Assertors* of our Liberties, rather *good, gracious, just, righteous, Princes, Benefactors*, than *Tyrants or Oppressors*, for the future, seeing they never out of *Parliament* imposed, enforced on their subjects any such heavy, various, perpetual *Taxes, Imposts, Excises, Ordinances, or new Articles of the*

*Ge-*

Government, as these forecited.

2ly. This Objection (if admitted just or solid) gives a private Cabinet Council, of obscure persons ( yet unknown by name unto our Nation) a Superlative, Super-Parliamentary Authority, to contrive and set on foot, a new devised Instrument, to undermine and blow up all our former fundamental Laws, Customs, great Charters, Liberties, Franchises, Properties, Parliaments, former frame of Government at one cracke, after all our late bloody, costly contestations for their preservation, both in the Supreme Courts of Publick Justice, and fields of War, without our privities or consents thereto, either in or out of Parliament, contrary to all their and our Protestations, Oathes, Covenants, Commissions, Trusts, Promises, Pretences; And instead of English Freemen (as we were before these contests and wars) to strip us quite naked of all our former Freedoms, Liberties, Properties, Customs, Rights, derived to us from our Noble Ancestors, as the purchas of their dearest blood & render us & our posterities for the future, the most absolute *Isachars, Vassals, slaves under Heaven*, intrahled to all sorts of intollerable, illegal, unprovided, incessant, endlesse Taxes of all kinds, without hopes of alteration or mitigation by any future Parliaments, (without their Protectors or his Successors voluntary conents, which they cannot expect) and to a constant standing *Mercenary Army of Horse and Foot, by Land, and Navies of Hirelings by Sea*, to keep us and ours in perpetual Bondage under such New irregular Successive Tax-Masters, who must entail their successors like themselves.

3ly. All our former antient Laws, Statutes, Parliaments till now, in all changes, Revolutions of State or Government, ever constantly asserted, maintained, provided, \* *That no Tax, Tallow, Custom, Contribution, Impost, Subsidy, Charge, Excise, Loan or Payment whatsoever, should be imposed on the Freemen of England, without their common consent and grant, in full, free, lawfull English Parliaments; and if any were imposed other-*

\* See p. 12 to 20 before the 1 Proposition, and Statutes, Arguments thereunto: specially 23 E. 1. c. 5. 6. 34. E. 1. c. 1. 2, 3. 14 E. 3. c. 21, and Stat. 2. c. 1. 3. *Caroli The Petition of Right.*

wife

wise by any Power or Pretext whatsoever out of Parliament, that it was Null, and void to all intents, to bind the people. But these *Monstrous Articles* quite turn the scales; impowering a few private persons (neither elected nor intrusted by the people for such ends) by colour of this ill tuned Instrument (contrived privately by themselves alone, as most conjecture, for their own self-interest) to impose perpetuall *Impots, Excises, (ustomes, Contributions of all kinds, on our whole three Kingdoms and Nations;* which neither they, nor their Parliaments (though never so grievous, extravagant, unreasonable or oppressive) shall have power to take away, diminish, alter, or regulate in the forecited illegal, oppressing, violent ways of levying them, unless their Grand Sovereign Lord Protector, shall first give his consent thereto; (which they cannot expect, nor enforce,) and in case of his refusal, they are utterly left remediless; he having *Thirty thousand armed Mercenary Horse and Foot in several Quarters by Land, and a strong numerous Navy by Sea at his command, to keep them under endless Tributes to him and his Successors for ever.* O England, England, (to omit Scotland and Ireland) consider seriously, and timely; to what a blessed *Liberty, and long-expedited freedom,* this New-invented Instrument and the Irish Harp, lately quartered with the English bloody Cross, as our Free-State Arms, hath now at last reduced thee; if these objected Articles must remain inviolable, maugre all our Laws, Statutes, &c to the contrary; as our New Tax-masters and their Instruments, both literally and practically conclude, unless you use your uttermost, lawfull, present, diligent, joyned Endeavours to prevent it. I should say, if you will not do it

\*See their Impeachments & printed trials, & Mr. St. Johns Argument at Law against Strafford, p. 3435.

4ly, The whole House of Commons, yea some who were parties to this Instrument, lately impeached and with the Lords house, by judgment of Parliament condemned, beheaded the \* Earl of Strafford, and Archbj. (bop of Canterbury, as guilty of High Treason, in subverting our Fundamental Laws, Liberties, and setting up an

arbitrary Tyrannical Government; for, refolving at the Council Table, before-hand, to affit the King to raise Monies on the Subjects to carry on the Warrs against the Scots; by extraordinary wages, in case the Parliament should prove peevish, and refuse to grant such Subsidies as they demanded of them. And for Strafford affirming, That Ireland was a Conquered Nation, and that the King might do with them what he pleased: 't hat they were a Conquered Nation, and were to expect Lawes as from a Conqueror. And that he would make an Act of Council board in that Kingdom of Ireland, as binding as an Act of Parliament. And do not the Objectors, Contrivers of this New Instrument Articles, and those who now vigorously put it in execution in any kind (as too many do;) speak out, and do as much, as bad, as they in each of these particulars; nay farre more and worse? Do not they (after the late violent breaches of our former Parliaments, and their own Functiones by the Army;) raise monies in more vast proportions, by more irregular, violent, extraordinary wages, by longer continued Taxes, Excises, Impositions, and constant yearly Revenues, then they ever did or designed, quite out of Parliament, by their own arrogated Legillative Tax-imposing Power? Do not they by this very Instrument, proclaim to all the world, that not only *Ireland* and *Scotland*, but *England* it self, is now a mere Conquered Nation? that thereupon they may do with us what they please; and we must not only expect, but receive Lawes from them as *longupris*; having already published whole Volumes of New-Laws and Ordinances of all sorts at their New-erected Council-Board (which the Old never did) and made them as binding, not only to *Ireland*, but *England* and *Scotland* too, as an *Act of Parliament*? & in farre more binding than any Parliament *Act*, by binding the hundre power of future Parliaments <sup>1</sup> Cook 4 Inf. themselves, and our three whole Nations (as aforesaid) <sup>2</sup> p. 42. 11 R. 2. <sup>3</sup> c. 4. 1 H. 4. <sup>4</sup> 45. 1 H. 4. <sup>5</sup> 143. 2 H. 4. <sup>6</sup> c. 22. 21 R. 2. <sup>7</sup> c. 45. 5; 8. 1. <sup>8</sup> H. 4. c. 7. rot. <sup>9</sup> Parl. n. 48. 6a. <sup>10</sup> 68.

former Fundamental Laws, Charters, Liberties, Free Government made by Parliaments, with our very Parliaments themselves? And if so, let the Objectors now seriously consider both the *Treasonableness*, unparliamentalness, and *Consequences* of this Objection, and what ill effects it may produce in present or future ages.

5ly, The Statutes of 25 E. 1. c. 2. & 41 E. 3. c. 2. yet in force, declare *All judgements given or to be given by the Justices, or any other, contrary to the points of the Great Charter, to be void and holden so; nought: and if any Statute be made to the contrary, it shall be holden for none.* Therefore these *Instruments* Articles, and *P-  
ar-  
-t-  
-u-  
-r-  
-e-  
-s*utes.

6. If these Articles and Instrument (for the premised reasons, and defect of *Legal power* in the yet unknown *Instrument-makers*) be not void in Law, to all intents and purposes, as all *wise men* repute them; yet other *clauses*, and *Articles* of this very *Instrument*, (admit it valid and obligatory to our *Nation*) give a fatal blow to all the aforementioned *Excises, Impositions, Contributions* by colour thereof, and to the *Objected Articles*.

First the Prologue to the Oath, at the close thereof, proclaims the *Govern-  
-men-  
-t-  
-e-  
-s* sealed by us, to be such, as by

<sup>2</sup>Jer. 21.12. c. the blessing of God might be lasting, secure Property, and  
22. 3. 4. 5. Pf. <sup>4</sup>and ver The Great Ends of Religion and Liberties, so  
12. 5. Ezech. long Contended for: But these Articles (as the Objecti-  
18. 5. 10. 14. c. on and premises evidence) do no wayes secure, but deter-  
22. 12. 13. 27. ly subvert all Property, in the highest degree; and as-  
29. 30. c. 45. 7. to 10. c. 46. 18. <sup>5</sup>ver not, but eternally frustrate, abolish, the Great ends  
Mich. 3. 1. 10. of our Religion (condemning all illegal, unrighteous Tax-  
5. c. 2. 3. 2. 3. es and <sup>6</sup>\* Tyrannical, usurping, Oppressing arbitrary Pow-  
c. 7. 2. Isa 58. ers) but especially of our Liberties, so long contended  
6. for;

for; and are rather likely to raise new troubles and unsettlements, than make the Government lasting (as many late Presidents, with those ancient ones in Dr. Beard his *Theatre of Gods Judgements*, I. 2. c. 36. to 43. may persuade us;) Therefore it must be exploded, as repugnant to the whole scope of the instrument.

2. The 6. Article of it is fatal and destructive to the objected Articles; viz: *That the Laws shall not be altered, suspended, abrogated, or repealed, nor any New Law made, but any Tax, Charge, or Imposition laid upon the People, but by common consent in Parliament.* *Saves Only,* as is expressed in the 30th Article (not 27.) Now these objected 27, 28, 29 Articles, being diametrically contrary to every word, clause of this 6 Article, and agreeable to our Fundamental Laws (which the last clause of the Oath oblige them *Pro se et Pro his Successors to maintain, and to govern the People by*) which Laws must be all "altered, suspended, abrogated, repealed by these Articles alone, if reputed valid; in giving Power to them, to impose any Tax, Charge, Imposition upon the People, without common consent in Parliament; and being not within the saving of this, or the 30th Article, must needs be void and repealed by this very sixth Article, and the Oath it self.

3. The 30th Article following them, diametrically contradicts, repeals them in these words. *That the raising of Money for defraying the charges of present extraordinary Forces both by Land and Sea, is respect of the present wars, shall be by consent of Parliament: Saves only, that the Lord Prosector, with the consent of the Major part of the Council, for preventing the disorders and dangers which may otherwise fall out both at Sea and Land, shall have power until the Meeting of the first Parliament (on the 3. September 1654.) to raise monies for the purposes aforesaid.* The former part of this Article is consonant to, and expounded by the 6. forecited, which is more general: and the plain sense thereof is this. *That all monies raised for defraying the*

\*See True, &c.  
P. 17; 18.

Extraordinary Forces both by Land and Sea (exceeding the ancient Standing Garrisons, Guards maintained by the old constant Revenues of the Crown, without any Tax upon the People) shall be by consent of Parliament. Therefore *a fortiori*; all perpetual standing Taxes, Excises, Contributions to maintain the ordinary and extraordinary Forces by Land or Sea, and ordinary expences of the Government (which, in respect of their constancy, permanency, are far more grievous, dangerous to the Subject than rare extraordinary ones upon emergent occasions,) must and ought not to be imposed by their new created Power out of Parliament, after the 3. of September.

*Objection.*

If any here object; That the latter clause of the 30 Article *Sav. only, &c.* Authorized those at Whitehall, without a Parliament, to impose Excises, Taxes, Customs, Impositions, Contributions forementioned, and any other constant annual Revenue they shall settle, according to the 27 Article; so as it be done before September 3. 1654. Therefore they are all lawfull, because imposed before that time by their printed Ordinances forecited.

*Answer.*

I Answer, 1. That this *saving*, is utterly void in law, to all intents, &c. Because it is not only contrary to all our Fundamental Laws, Great Charters, Statutes, but repugnant to the body of the 6 Article, and first part of the 39. to which it is annexed. 2. Because it assigns the *Legislative Tax-imposing Power* (the inseparable *incor-  
ruptionable, Inr.isdiction* of our Parliaments alone) to a new Whitehall Council, by a void instrument made out of Parliament for a certain time, which biggest Sovereign power, the Parliament in self neither legally may, nor can, nor ought to transfer by any Ordinance or Act of Parliament to any Committee of their own Members, no not for a moment, as is both resolved and declared by Act of Parliament. 1. H. 4. c. 3. and Rot. Parl. 1. H. 4. n. 26, 48, 6. 6. 70. 31. H. 8. c. 8. 34. H. 8. c. 23. and 1. E. 5. c. 12. it being derogatory and destructive

live to the free State power, Rights of Parliaments, tending to the great incommodey of the whole Realm, and of pernicious example to posterity, as the whole Parliament of 1. H. 4 long since resolved in positive terms.

3ly. This saving is just like the Popes old \* *Detestable Ponibilante*, at the close of their Bulls; *qua omnem subversis prahabitas Justitiam*, which subverted all the Justice and Privileges granted before to any in the Body of those Bulls; and as pernicious as that \* *Proviso*, which the House of Lords desired at first, to have inserted into the *Petition of Right*, which would have made it *Felo de se*, because it insinuated that the King by his Sovereign power where with the Law had intrusted him, for the protection, safety, and happiness of his People might impose any Aid, Tax, Tallage, or charge upon his People without a Parliament, though by his ordinary power he could not do it, which had left the Subjects in worse case than it found them, and wholly destructive to itself in all the parts thereof: whereupon after a conference had concerning it by the Commons, it was totally rejected by both Houses; as this *Salvo* must be for the self same reason.

3ly. Admit it valid; yet it gives power to them to raise moneys for the maintenance by Land and Sea: only until September 3. 1654. and no longer; as is evident by the very words themselves; and the Confession, Exposition, (of those who made the Instrument, as most suppose) in their, *The State of the Case of the Commonwealth of England, &c.* 1654. p. 39. 40. in these words. *This power is to continue only till the sitting of the next Parliament.* Yea George Smith in his new Treatise, intituled, *Gods unchangeable Law, &c.* (in justification of the present Governour and Government) p. 54. writes thus; *And for his seeking to have power to make Laws, and raise moneys, it is mere calumniaition. He seeks it not, He claimes it not, but leaves it to the wisdom of Parliament, as appears in Article 6. (as is thus excepted)*

\* *M. de Paris  
Hist. Anglie  
London, 1640.*

p. 810. 818,  
854. 875.  
\* See Mr. S.  
Fairs Speech  
against the  
Ship-money  
Judges, p. 16,  
17. 18. 19.  
Exact. Col-  
lect. p. 685.

cepted) for and in Cases of safety and necessity, till the time that this present Parliament was assembled, and yet to be done by him with the advice of his Council, so then he seeks not the strength nor treasure of the Nation, nor to have it in his own power. Therefore they can impose no Taxes, Excises, nor Contributions by their printed Ordinances to continue after its beginning; nor by any future Ordinances (as they term them) after that time. Now the first Tax of Excise, forementioned, is imposed till the 26 of March 1655 which is 7 months after the 3 of September 1654. The 2 of Customs, Tonnage and Poundage, is continued till the 26 of March 1658, which is 3 years and 7 months after this 3 of September. And the 3 for the 6 Months Contribution reacheth till the 29 of December 1654, which is near full 4 Months after the first sitting of that their next Parliament: And any constant yearly Revenue settled by them, will far exceed this limited time, and all former Taxes: Therefore all these premised, and all other future Excises, Customs, Impost, Contributions by pretended Ordinances for their levying after the 3 of September, exceeding the power and time limited by this Saving, must be void, and no ways warranted by the very Saving it self, and to be opposed as such.

4ly. To say, That although these several impositions continue after the 3 of September 1654, yet they were imposed by their Printed Ordinances before it; therefore within this Saving is a most absurd excuse and shift, repugnant to the words, yea wholly destructive to the 6 Article, and first part of the 30, For by this reason had their forecited Ordinances (or any other dormant or future Annotated ones yet unpublished) imposed Excises, Customs, Tonnage, Poundage, Contributions on us for twenty, fifty, an hundred, or a thousand years yet to come, before the 3. of September, they must have been binding to us and our posterities, during all that space, and unavoidable by the people, or future Parliaments, by this Saving and exposition of it. But the words of this

this Saving, giving only Power to raise Spontes until the Meeting of the first Parliament ; not to make *New Edicts* any time before it to impose and continue Taxes for any time or years after it, ( which would have fore-stalled, affronted the next and all future Parliaments in their proper work, of granting, regulating all future Taxes (according to the 6. and 30. Articles) and made them mere Cyphers;) clearly takes away this evasion ; with all their former and future *Whitchall Impositions* after the 3 of September ; as contrary both to their *Instru-ment* and *Oath*.

5ly, The words of the 30th Article whereto this Saving refers, are observable, That they shall have power until the meeting of the first Parliament, to raise Monies for defraying the Charges of the Extraordinary Forces both at Land and Sea, In respect of the present Warre; To which, for the purposes aforesaid, in the Standing relates. But the present Warres being many Moneths since ended, both by Land and Sea, by the Peace concluded with Foreign Nations: and so no need, nor use of Extraordinary Forces, to be still continued by Land or Sea; the ancient Trayned Bands and Militia of the Realm, being now well able to defend, secure us at their owne cost, without any Mercenary Forces, Excises or Contributions, only to pay them; the power of raising Monies in this Saving, with the grounds thereof, are now at an end, as well as our Warres; and the whole 27 Articles too: Since the old Standing Militia, and Trayned Bands of the 3. Nations, will be a sufficient Safeguard to them without our Mercenary Army or Forces; which

bins of the 31 Nations, will be a sufficient ~~Supply~~ to them, without our Mercenary Army or Forces; which \* usually prove *Treacherous Supplancers, Usurpers, Oppressors* to all who rely upon them; whereupon our prudent *Ancestors*, since *Villegarnes usurpation*, \* intrusted their *Militia and Defence of the Realm*, only in the hands of the *Nobility, Gentry, Freeholders, and persons of best ability and estates*, not in *Mercenary Armies* (which supplanted the *Brisons*;) And our Warres now ceasing, the antient *Revenues, Lands, Customes of the Crowne*, \* See *Hughes Microclime*. p. 756, 757, 758, 395, 412, 507, 577, 578, 642, 672, 704, Exact Coll. p. 7, 575, 639, 640, 641, 807, 836, 850, 10, 890.

and

and Perquisites of the Courts of Justice, will be sufficient to defray all the Ordinary expences of the Government, Navy, old standing Garrisons, (if continued, though

\* See the A & useles Officers of State and Justice, as they did in all former ages, and still ought to do, for the peoples ease and benefit.

11. 53.

(4) See *Cookes* 4 Instit. c. 1. p. 33. Regal Taxes, & here ch. 3. sect. 45. &c.

6ly, It hath been the special policy, care of our prud-  
dent Fore-fathers and wife (a) Parliaments, never to  
grant any annual Tax or Charge ( except Tonnage and  
Poundage in some cases for a limited time ) for Publike  
Defence, unto their Kings and Governours; nor usually  
to give them above Subsidy, or one or two Fifteens, or a  
single Escuage, and sometimes not so much, in any one  
Parliament, upon any extraordinary occasion or necessity,  
and that upon these Grounds. 1. Because \* extraordinary  
Aydes, ought to be granted only for, and proportioned to

\* See 14 E. 3. c. 21. & stat. 2. c. 1. 5 R. 2. & stat. 2. c. 2, 3, & all Acts for Subsidie.

extraordinary, present, emergent Necessities, visibly ap-  
pearing; which being not lasting, but momentany and  
various one from another, no standing certain Contribu-  
tion can or ought to be allotted for them, but only a tem-  
porary and mutable; the ordinary settled Crown Re-  
venues being sufficient to defray all ordinary expences,  
without other Aydes. 2ly, To keep a perpetual tye upon  
their Kings and Governours, to summon frequent Par-  
liaments, and redre all their Grievances in them, before  
they should receive any Grant of new Ayds or Subsidies  
from them, to supply their publique Necessities; to pre-  
serve a Power and Right in Parliaments to examine the  
grounds and present necessity of all Taxes demanded:

\* See *Henry de Knighton de Eventibus Angliae*, 1. 5. col. 1681. to 1690. 2 R. 2. rot. Parl. n. 20. 21. 24.

and to \* take an Accomp how former Taxes, & the Kings Revenues had been disbursed, before they granted new ones: All which the granting of standing annual Aydes for publique Defence would frustrate. 3ly, To prevent the encroaching of a constant Charge and Revenue on the People, which if granted but for years, life; or but twice or thrice in the same kind and proportion, without alter-  
ation, though but as a free gift in Parliament, would thereupon be claimed, exacted from them afterwards, as

a more just annual Right, and Revenue, without their future grants, as *Danegeld*, was by some of our Kings of old; *Imposts* once granted, by *Edward the 3.* and other Kings heretofore; and the *Customes of Tonnage & Poundage* by King *Charles* of late. 6ly, To avoid all unjust Oppressions of the people by imposing on them more Taxes at once than the present urgent necessities required. 5ly, To prevent the inhaunting, doubling of Taxes by any new dangerous Presidents; Sir *Edward Coke* observes in his *4 Institutes*, p. 33. *That the Commons never used to give above one Temporary Subsidie, and two Fifteens, in any one Parliament, and sometimes less; till the Parliament of 31 Eliz. which gave 2 Subsidies, and 4 Fifteens; upon which first breach of this old circle and usage, their Taxes still increased afterwards by degrees; for in 35, & 39 Eliz. they rose to 3 Subsidies, and 6 Fifteens: in 43 Eliz. to 4 Subsidies and 8 Fifteens: in 21 Jacobi to 3 Subsidies, and 6 Fifteens, in shorter time then had been before: in 3 Caroli, to 5 Subsidies in shortest time of all: and now of late, to constant annual Imposts, Excises, & endless Monethly Contributions, amounting to at least 3 Subsidies every Moneth.* 6ly, Because a standing extraordinary Tax (especially for years or life) when once claimed or received as part of the *publique Revenue*, would be hardly relinquished, or discontinued, without much contest, and danger; as appears by *Danegeld* of old, and *Tonnage, Poundage, Excise, Monthly Contributions* of late imposed as of right upon us, by every new upstart Power; and when once customarily claimed, collected as a *Duty*, will no ways ease nor exempt the people from new *Extraordinary Aydes and Taxes*. This is evident by that memorable President concerning *Abby-Lands*, in King *Henry the 8 his reign*, settled on him as a large annuall standing Revenue, of purpose to defend the Realm, and ease the People from all future *Aydes*, by the Parliaments of 27 H. 8. c. 28. 31 H. 8. c. 13. 32 H. 8. c. 14. Yet were these *Lands* no sooner settled on the Crown for these ends, but in the same Parliament of 32 H. 8. the

King demanded and had of his Subjects, one extraordinary Subsidy both of the Clergy and Laity; and 34 H. 8. c. 16, 17. & 37 H. 8. c. 24. he demanded and had the like Subsidy of them again: and his Successors the like and greater Subsidies every Parliament since. The like we see in the Case of Tonnage and Poundage, granted only for the Defence of the Seas and Realm against Foreign Enemies & Pirates: Which no sooner taken by the late King, as a Standing Revenue of the Crown, but he exacted and levied against Law, a New annual Tax of Ship-money, to guard the Seas, for which very use he received Tonnage, Poundage, and the ancient Customs; as our late Governors did, and present do; together with new Imposts and Excises; and yet impose Land-rates of Forty thousand pounds a Month besides, to Maintain the Navy. To instance in one particular more: Our late new Governors made sales of all Archbishops, Bishops, Deanes, Chapters, Delinquent, Kings, Queens, Princes, and Sequestred Lands and Goods, both in England, Scotland, and Ireland, one after another; under pretext, to ease the People in, and of their heavy Taxes: But what was the issue? all their Taxes, Excises, and other Impositions were still continued on them, without any intermission or diminution, nay advanced higher than ever, to 120 thousand pounds Contribution by the Month for England, besides Scotland and Ireland, even whiles all these Lands and Goods were selling; the Lands and Goods sold, consumed, without any publicque Account yet given of the Menies, or their disposall; or any present ease to the oppressed people: and the ordinary standing Revenues of the Realm being now by this means decayed, dissipated, and almost brought to nothing; these New Projectors and Dissipators of this vast publicque Revenue; instead of easing, by colour of this Instrument, resolve to impose upon the undone, long-oppressed Peoples gauled, broken backs and Estates, such perpetual constant, annual Taxes, Excises, Imposts, Revenues as you have heard, for the Maintenance both of the Army, Navy, Administration of Justice,

lice and other ordinary expences of the Government ; which no Kings of England ever yet received, or pretended to. Which if any future Parliaments shall be so mad, or improvident once to settle, or the Kingdom not unanimously to oppugne ; if settled by them without a Parliament, instead of easing of the People of their long insupportable Taxes, now their Wars are ended ; in all succeeding Parliaments, they shall still be burthened with new extraordinary Taxes, upon new pretended extraordinary occasions, and Forces raised ( as the words of the 30 Article, compared with the 27 and 29, declare ) as if this new constant revenue had never been settled ; and if our Parliaments refuse to grant them, these New Projecting Tax-Masters ( who must dispose of all the moneys in the intervals of Parliaments ) will impose and levy them at their pleasure, by their Supertrancendent usurped Tyrannical Power and Sword men, and dispose of them as they please without a Parliament, as they have already done, without rendring any other publick Accompt to the people thereof, than hath hitherto been given to them of all the many millions of Treasure already extorted from them of late years, to no other end ( as appears by these Articles of our New Government ) but now at last, to bring and keep them under perpetual endless Taxes of all sorts, and the intollerable, worse than Turkisb Slavery of a perpetual domineering Mercenary Army, Navy, instead of long promised Liberty, ease and exemption from them, till they are all brought to a morsel of bread, and till their private estates be utterly consumed, as well as the publick Crown and Church Revenues, yet remaining.

The last and serious consideration of all which Premises, I humbly submit to the Impartial Judgements, Consciences of our present Governors, Army-Officers, Soldiers themselves, how discrepant they are from all their former printed Declarations, Protests, Promises, Vows, Engagements to the People, and what they expected from them ; It was the Speech of the Scythian

*Embassadors, to Alexander the Grand Conquerour of the world,* \* *Nec Servire ulli possumus, nec regnare de-  
federamus. Si Deus es, tribuere mortalibus beneficia de-  
bes, non sua eripere, sic Homo es, id quod es semper  
esse cogita, Stultum est eorum meminisse propter que  
tui oblivisceris:* Let it be all Heroick Freemens to our pretended Conquerors; who may do well to remember that Hermolaus and other Officers, and Soldiers of Alexanders own Guard, conspired his destruction, after all his Persian Conquests, for this very reason,

\* *Q. Curtius*, which they justified to his face, \* *Quia non ut ingenuis imperare capisti, sed quasi in mancipia dominaris;* because he had begun not to reign over them as Freemen, but to domineer over them like Slaves; and because Revelations in this age, may be more prevalent with some Men than Gods own Oracles, or our Lawes; I shall inform our Tax-imposing Governours; that St. Bridger of Sweden in the 8 Book of her \* *Revelations of the Heavenly Emperour unto Kings*, cap. 6 records; That she had this Revelation from the Son of God, That Kings and Governours ought to love the People and Commonalty of their Realms: That they then shew they truly love them, when they permit them to enjoy their approued Laws and Liberties; when cruel Exactors and Collectors domineer not over them; if they burthen them not with new Inventions of Impost, Taxes, and Tributes, nor with grievous and unaccustomed Hospitality, Permanencies or Freequarter; For although for the resisting of Infidels they may humbly petere auxilium a Populo; humbly request an aid from the People and Commons of their Realms (not imperiously impose it) when there is a necessity; yet let them beware quod necessitas illa non ventiat in consuetudinem & legem, that the necessity comes not into a custom and law: \* For that King (or Ruler) who layes not aside his unjust Exactions, and Fraudulent Inventions to raise monies, and oppresse his People, making his reigns and Kingdoms mere robberies and rapines, as most then did, and now too) let him know for

\* Printed at  
Nuremberg  
1521.

\* See *Revelationum* 1. 4. c. 104, 105. 1. 7. c. 16. 1. 8. c. 48. & *Revelationes extravagantes*. c. 73, 80.

certaint he shall not prosper in his doings, but shall lead and end his life in grief, dismisse his Kingdoms in tribulations; his Son and Posterity sha'l be in such hatred, reproach and confusion, that all men shall wonder thereat; & his Soul shall be tormented by the Devils in Hell: which <sup>Revelationum</sup> she manifests by the <sup>\*example of an unjust Tax-imposing</sup> King, damned to Hell, and there tormented by the Devils: For that to retain the Kingdom to himself, and defend it from Invasions, he pretended the aient Revenues of his Eschequer would not defray the Expences of the Government, and Realms defence; whereupon he devised certain new Inventions, and fraudulent Extactions of Imposts, Tributes, Taxes, and imposed them on his Kingdome, to the damage of the Natives, and oppression of innocent Merchants and Strangers; although his conscience dictated to him, *Quod ista erant contra Deum, et omnem Justitiam, et Publicam Honestatem*: that these things were against God, and all Justice, and Common Honesty; as our forementioned Excises, Imposts, Taxes are now. Let those wh<sup>o</sup> are now guilty of this sinne in the highest degree, beware they incurre not the self-same temporal and infernal punishments, thus threatened to and inflicted upon others. And let our whole English Nation and their Trustees, upon serious consideration of all the premises, beware how they in any kind, through fear or cowardise, submit their necks or backs to the forementioned illegal Yokes and Burdens, of perpetual standing, *Excises, Imposts, Contributions, and Taxes*, to enslave themselves and their Posterities for ever to an oppressing *Military New Government, and perpetual Army*: For which end I shall only recommend unto their meditation and practise, this observation and policy of our prudent Ancestors, <sup>\*</sup>*Vitus actus inducit Confluetudinem; that a double general submission to, and payment of such exorbitant illegal Taxes, will introduce a customary, future exaction and payment of them*; which made them always (as we have greatest reason now to do) *peremptorily to withstand the first, to prevent a second customary, future exaction*

and payment in like kind ; pursuing the Poet, Ovids old sage Counsel, wherewith I shall conclude this point.

\* *De Remedio Amoris, l. 2.*

\* *Principiis obsta : serò medicina paratur*  
*Cum mala per longas invaluere moras,*

How transcendently all the other Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Rights of our English Freeborn Nation have by late and present Governours and their Instruments been infringed, subverted in an higher avowed degree than ever in former ages, by foretible tyranical Proceedings of all kindes, in breaking open mens Houses, by armed Souldiers, and other unsworn illegal Officers, Excisemen, Sequestrators, both by day and night ; seizing their Persons, Houses, Armes, Papers, Writings ; ransacking their Studier, Truncks, Cabinets, upon false surmises, suspicions ; close imprisoning their persons ( by multitudes ) without, before any examination, particular accusation, bearing, trial, in unusual places ; and some of them in remotest Isles, Garrisons under Souldiers : Their pressing of men for Land and Sea service, and carrying them away perforce by Soldiers, Troopers, Officers, Mariners, (like so many Prisoners) out of their own Countys and the Realm, to unnatural, unchristian Warrs, against their Wills and Consciences : Their disinheriting many Thousands of English Freemen of all sorts, of their Freeholds, Lands, Offices, Franchises, Honors, Authorities ; spoiling them and theirs of their Goods, Chattles, Estates, Lives, in and by Arbitrary Committees, Martial, & other extravagant Courts of highest Injustice : Subverting, Changing our ancient Fundamental Lawes, Statutes, and enabling New without the Peoples free consents in Lawfull, English Parliaments : altering the whole Frame and Constitution of our Monarchy, Government, and Parliaments themselves : Depriving the people of the Free election of their Parliament Members, and other Elective Officers, contrary to our Lawes, Charters, Usages ; securing, excluding the Members of Parliament themselves, by armed Force ; dissolving Parliaments by the Sword alone, without writ or legall power,

power, contrary to Acts and Privileges of Parliament; by creating New Legislative, Tax-imposing, Self-created Powers, (not elected by the People) at Whitehall and elsewhere, not to be paralleld in any age. By creating New-Treasons contrary to the old ones, and the Statute of 25 E. 3. and condemning, sequestring, imprisoning, executing English Peers and Freemen, only for their loyalty, Duty to their Lawfull Sovereigns, and defence of the Rights, Privileges, Liberties, Laws of the Kingdom, Parliaments, Nation, according to their Oathes, Protestations, League, Covenant, and Gods own Precepts, against the publique Enemies, Oppugners, Undarminers, Subvertors of, and Conspirators against them. By making publick wars at Land and Sea with our Christian Protestant Brethren, and other Nations; and concluding Leagues, Truces without common consent or advice in Parliament. By alienating, selling, giving, squandering away the ancient Demesnes, Lands, Honours, Rents, Revenues, Rights, Inheritances of the Crown of England, (yea of Scotland and Ireland likewise) to Officers, Soldiers of the Army, and others, for pretended Arrears, Services, or inconsiderable values; which should defray all the constant ordinary Expences of the Government, publique, State Officers, Embassadors, Garrisons, Navy, Comis of the Kingdom, and ease the People from all kind of Taxes, Payments, Contributions whatsoever toward them (except in extraordinary emergent cases and necessities in times of war, requiring extraordinary expences for their publique safety supplied by Aydes and Subsidies granted only by common consent in Parliament only, and not otherwise) which now must be wholly, or for the greatest part defrased by the People alone, out of their own exhausted private estates, by endless Taxes, Excises, Contributions (as appears by the 27, 28, 29, 30. Articles of their New ill sounding Instruments foreinfisted on) whiles others, without right or legal Title, enjoy the old standing Demesnes, Lands, Rents, Revenues and Perquisites of the Crown for their private advantage without any Acts of Resumption

(\* usual)

\* See Mat. 23. p. 306. ( \* usual in all former ages ) to keep the Kingdom, Nation<sup>m</sup> from becoming Bankrupts, and people from oppression )  
 308. Grafton, which should ease the people of those intollerable constant  
 p. 90. 149. burthens lately laid upon them, against all Justice, Law,  
 Daniel, p. 78, 79, 83, 123. Conscience ; and make insufferable wafts, and spoyles of  
 1 R. 2. Rot. the stately Houses, Timber, Wood, Mines, Forrests,  
 Parl. 10. 148. Parkes of the Crown, without restraint, to the Kingdoms ex-  
 1 H. 4. n. 100. traordinary prejudice ; for which they ought to give an  
 6 H. 4. n. 14. Account and make full reparations, if the Earl of Devon-  
 15. 8 H. 4. n. shires case, Cook 11 Reports f. 89. 90, 91. be Law. And  
 52. 1 H. 5. c. by sundry other particulars ( requiring whole Baronian  
 6. 28 H. 6. volumes, to recite and specific to the full ; ) is so well  
 rot Parl. 11. 53. 31 H. 6. known by dayly experience, and multitude of Presidents  
 c. 7. 33. H. 6. n. 47. 4 E. 4. fresh in memory, to our whole three Nations, that I  
 n. 39. 12. E. 4. n. 6. shall here no further insist upon them. all which experi-  
 mentally confirm the truth of our Saviours own words :  
 John 10, 1, 10. Verily, verily I say unto you, He that  
 entreth not by the Dorr into the Sheepfold, but climberth  
 up some other way, the same is a Theef and a Robber ;  
 The Theef cometh not but steal and to kill, and to destroy,  
 Whatever his pretences be to the contrary. And this  
 rule of Johannes Angelius Wenderhagen: *Politis Synoptica*,  
 lib. 3. c. 9. sect. 11. p. 3. 10. *Hinc Regula loco notandum.*  
*Quod omne Regnum vi Armata acquisitum in effectu Subi-*  
*ditos Semper in durioris Servitatis conditiones arripiat, li-*  
*get a principio Dulcedinem prurientibus spirare videatur ;*  
*(which we now find most true, by sad, sensible experi-*  
*ence ) Ideo cunctis hoc cavendum, Ne temere se seduci pa-*  
*tiantur.*

FINIS.



The first and Second Part of  
SEASONABLE, LEGAL,  
AND  
HISTORICALL VINDICATION,  
AND

*Chronological COLLECTION of the Good, Old, Fundamen-  
tal Liberties, Franchises, Rights, Laws of all English Free-  
men their best Inheritance, Birthright, Security, against all  
Arbitrary Tyranny, and Egyptian Burdens) and of their strenuous  
Defence in all former Ages; of late years most dangerously un-  
dermined; and almost totally subverted, under the specious  
Disguise of their Defence and future Establishment, upon a false  
Basis, by their pretended, Greatest Propagators.*

WHEREIN IS,

Irrefragably evinced by Parliamentory Records, Proofs, Presidents,  
That we have such Fundamental Liberties, Franchises, Rights, Laws. That to  
attempt or effect the subversion of all or any of them, (or of our Fundamental  
Government) by Fraud or Force, is High Treason. The principal of them sum-  
med up in X. Propositions: The chief printed Treatises affecting them, speci-  
fied: A Chronological History of our Ancestors, zeal, vigilancy, courage, pru-  
dence, in gaining, regaining, enlarging, defending, of confirming and perpetuat-  
ing them to posterity, by Great Charters, Statutes, New Constitutions, Excom-  
munications, Speciall Conservatories, Consultations, Testimonies, Declarations, Re-  
monstrances, Oaths, Protections, Arms, Leagues, Covenants, and likewise by  
their Arms, when necessitated, during all the Britons, Romans, Saxons, Danes,  
Normans and English Kings Reigns, till this present; collected for present and  
future publicke benefit: with a Brief Touch of their late unparalleled Infringe-  
ments and subversions in every particular: The Triall of all Malefactors by  
their Peers and Juries, justified, as the onely just, best, most indifferent, and  
all other late arbitrary judicatories, erected for their Triall, exploded, as de-  
structive both to our Fundamental Laws and Liberties.

---

Collected, recommended to the whole English Nation, as the best Legacy he can  
leave them,

By *William Prynne of Swainswick, Esquire.*  
The Second Edition Corrected and much Enlarged.

---

*Psal. 11. 3. If the Fundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?*

*Psal. 83. 5. They know not, neither will they understand, they walk on in darkness: for  
all the Foundations of the earth are out of course.*

London, Printed for the Author, and are to be sold by *Edward  
Thomas in Green Arbour, 1655.*

To the truly Christian Reader,

7. That this their Dominion, Reign and Triumph, is commonly very short, like this *Beasts* here for forty two Months. *Rev. 13. 5.* which is but three years and an

(c) *Paterculus*, half. (c) *Julius Caesar* that great first Conqueror of this Island and a great part of the World; usurping the supreme Power over the Roman Senate, and changing the Government, *in Chronica*, *Grimston*, and others, in his Life. *Jacobus Uffius Anns. Britann. pars posterior*, p. 366, lived only FIVE MONTHS A SOVERAIGN LORD IN PEACE (though some compute his whole dominion 3 years and 7 months) and then was suddenly stabbed to death in the Senate-House, by those friends in whom he reposed greatest trust; for his Tyrannical usurpations, and alteration of their former Government; for endeavouring (as was suspected) to

\* Do not some now by words and deeds, repute it and the People for, and for saying, *That the Commonwealth Was but a Voice or Name, without a Body or Substance. Nullum violentum est disuersum, See Isa. 10, and 14. Job. 20. 4, 5, &c. Psal. 37 and 73. Psal. 92. 6, 7. Isa. 17, 13, 14. 2 Chron. 23. and Sir Walter Rawlins' Preface to his History of the World, worthy serious perusal by the Grandees of these times.*

8. That in conclusion such Conquering, usurping Beasts, notwithstanding all their Power, Friends, Followers, Confederates, Armies, Policies, are usually conquered, taken, slain on Earth, and cast into the Lake burning with fire and brimstone for ever, for their Tyrannies, Blasphemies, Bloodsheds Oppressions of the People and Gods Saints, and their Confederates, Armies, &c. Blasphemous followers, &c. &c.

9. That though they continue Conquerors and victorious for many years; and conquer not only, one, two or three, but many Kings and Kingdoms; cut off not only the thumbs of their Kings, that they might not lift up a Sword against them, and their great toes, that they may not

run from them, but their Heads too; Yet God at last ( in \* See the  
his retaliating Justice ) doth usually pay them Home in <sup>Turkish History</sup>  
their own coyne, as is evident, not onely by \* Rajazet the <sup>in his life.</sup>  
Turkish Empersour, our \* King Penda, ( who slew no leſſe <sup>dan, Mat. vij.</sup>  
than 5. Christian Kings in several battles, took ſundry other <sup>Act. 655. Gof-</sup>  
Kings prisoners, and at laſt was slain himſelf, with all his old <sup>ton, Speed, Ho-</sup>  
victorius Captains and Souldiers, by King Oswi, and a ſmall <sup>irſt, Fabian</sup>  
deſpiciole Army of raw Souldiers, not half ſo many as they, <sup>Brimpton, in</sup>  
Ann. 655. who thereupon ſeized on his Kingdom) and o- <sup>the late of</sup>  
thers in prophane Stories; but by that memorable History <sup>(d) Judg. 1. 2.</sup>  
of (d) Adonibezeck; who after his Conqueſt of no leſſe <sup>to 8.</sup>  
feſty Kingis, ( who ever in this latter age, conquered one  
quarter ſo many? ) and tyrannizing over their perſons,  
was, by a ſmall party of Judah and Simeon, ſought wiſh on his  
own dung-hil, his victorius old Army totally rented, ten  
thouſand of them ſlain, himſelf forced to fly, purſued, and taken  
prisoner by thele contemptible Enemies, who cut off his  
thumbs, and his great toes. Whereupon Adoni-bezok  
( though an idolatrous Canaanite ) uſed thele memorable  
words, worthy all Conquerours and Tyrants memorial;  
recorded by God himſelf to all Posterity, Judges 1. 7.  
Threescore and ten Kings having their thumbs, and their  
great toes cut off, have gathered their meat under my table  
( like ſo many Dogs rather than Kings) AS I HAVE  
DONB, SO GOD HATH REWARDED ME: and  
they brought him ( Prisoner ) to Ieruſalem, and there he di-  
ed. See the like retaliation threatened, inflicted. Hab. 2. 6,  
7, 8. Isa. 33. 1. Dan. 7. 23. to 27. Obad. 15. Ezech. 35.

5, 6, 15. Rev. 16. 5. 6. Ier. 51, and 52. Nah. 3. 1. &c. (e) See Joel 3.  
Rev. 13. 10. Ieel 3. 6, 7, 8. Denu. 32. 43. Isa. 10. & 14. 6, 7, 8. Mar. 26.  
2 Chron. 22. 10. compared with c. 23. 12. to the end.

10. That the Elect Saints of God, do by faith in the  
Word of God, and upon conſideration of the uſual Provi-  
dence and Justice of God towards ſuch Beasts and bloody  
Conquerors, moſt auſſuredly ſee their downfall, and with pa-  
tience expect it. Rev. 13. 9, 10. If any man have an ear let  
him hear. (e) HE THAT LEADETH INTO CAP-  
TIVITY, SHALL GO INTO CAPTIVITY; HE THAT

THAT KILLETH WITH THE SWORD, MVST BE KILLED WITH THE SWORD: Here is THE PATIENCE AND THE FAITH OF THE SA'NIS. O that we had this Patience and Faith within us now!

11. That upon this Faith and Assurance, the true Elect Saints of God, *neither will, nor do, nor dare to admire after, follow, worship or adore such Basts, or their Image, nor receive their marks in their hands, or foreheads, though all the world else ready do it without opposition; enduring patiently rather to be warred upon, killed, stoned from buying or selling any thing, then unchristianly to adore, subje<sup>t</sup>, or enslave themselves unto them, Rev. 13. 2, 15, 17. Esther 3. 1, to 7. 2 Kings 3. 13, 14. John 10. 4, 5. Dan. 3. 4. 19 30. 1 King. 19. 18. 2 Chron. 11. 13. 10 18.*

Which serious seasonable considerations, as they should daunt the hearts and allay the high Presumptuous Spirits of the most Successfull Conquerors, Powerfull *Usurpers* over, and violent *Inwaders* of the Liberties, Lives, Estates, Rights, Properties of their Lawfull Superiors or Christian Brethren, and all *Subverters* of the Laws, Priviledges, Parliaments, Government of their Native Country, especially against their Oathes and Trusts: So the Meditation on them, together with the contemplation of the infinite Power, Wisdom, Faithfulness, Justice, Holiness, Presence, and gracious Promises of God, have at all times and seasons hitherto, invincibly animated, steeled, fortified my Soul in the midt of all my sufferings, both under the domineering Prelates, Parliament - assaulting Army-Officers, the late Tyrannical cashiered Republicans, and all other self-created oppressing Powers, which (if not already dead and buried in the dust, with all their thoughts and high aspiring Projects,) yet shall certainly (f) die ere long like men, and because we d<sup>r</sup>ang; yea, they have enabled me by Faith and

(f) 11s. 51. 6. Patience, to be (g) more than a conqueror triumphing over  
12. c. 26. 13, 14. them: and to sing aloud with magnanimous David (a man  
Psal. 82. 7. Psal. 146. 354. after Gods own heart) long before their down-fall, Psal.  
(g) Rom. 8. 36. 27. 1, 2, 3. The Lord is my Light and my Salvation, whom  
37. Psal. 3. 6. shall I fear? The Lord is the strength of my life, of whom shall

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

I be afraid? When the wicked even mine enemies and my foes came upon me to eat up my flesh, they stumbled and fell. Though an Host should encamp against me (as they did at Westminster, at my House, and in sundry Garrisons, where I was a Prisoner under Soldiers) my heart shall not fear: though War should rise against me, in this I will be confident. I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people that have set themselves against me round about. And to cry out in Pauls words of defiance against all Enemies and Perils in the cause of my God and Country (uttered in his own and all true Elected Saints names) Rom. 8. 35, &c. *Who shall separate us from the love of Christ?* (or our Native Country, as well actively as passively considered;) Shall tribulation? or distress? or persecution? or famine? or peril? or SWORD? (of an whole Army, or other Powers) Nay, in all these things we are more than Conquerors through him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor PRINCIPALITIES, NOR POWERS, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. And to say with him in all threatned Dangers for my sincere conscientious publick Services, Act. 20. 22. 24. And now I go bound to Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall there befall me, save, that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every City, saying: That Bonds and Afflictions wait for me. But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto me, so as I may finish my course with joy, and the Ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus, &c. And verily me thinks the serious contemplation thereof, and of all the premises, with that of 2 Sam. 10. 12. Isa. 51. 12. 13. Jer. 1. 8. Ezech. 2. 2, to 6. Matth. 10. 26. 28. coupled with Psal. 11. 3. If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do? Prov. 24. 22, 23. My Son, fear thou the Lord and the King, AND MEDDLE NOT WITH THOSE WHO ARE GIVEN TO CHANGE; For their calamity shall rise suddenly (which we have seen verified in many late Changers, Mock Parliaments, and self-created new Powers,) and who knoweth

the ruine of them both? should now at last banish all base carnal fears out of all timorous hearts, rouse up the languishing, fearfull, dead, stupid Spirits of our degenerated English Nation, and engage them all unanimously, undauntedly to claim, vindicate, regain, re-establish those ancient undoubted *Hereditary Fundamental Rights, Liberties, Priviledges, Franchises, Laws, Government,* ( purchased with their Ancestors & their own dearest Blood, sweat, Treasures) which belong to the whole Kingdom; to all true English Parliaments, Freemen in general, and to every of them in particular; whereof they have of late years been forcibly dispossed, or hypocritically cheated by pretended Patrons, Preservers, and Propugners of them; the substance whereof I have here set before their eyes in ten brief *Propositions*, and by Records, Statutes, Presidents, Histories, Contests, Resolutions in all ages, undauntedly, (as their *Common Advocate*) asserted, fortified to my power, for their Encouragement and presidenc in this publick work. And if they will now but courageously second me herein, with their joyn, bold, rightfull *Claims, Votes, Declarations, and Resolute Demands* of all and every of their enjoyments, and future inviolable Establishments; with strenuous Oppositions of all illegal perpetual *Imposts, Excises, Contributions, Payments* (the chief nerves and cords to keep them still in bondage by Mercenary Forces, supported only by them to keep them still in slavery) according to their *Oaths, Vows, Protestations, Duties, manifold late Declarations, Remonstrances, Solemn League, Covenant,* and the encouraging *memorable Presidents* of their Ancestors in former ages here, recorded; I dare assure them (by Gods blessing) a desired *good-Success*, whereof their <sup>a</sup> *Ancestors* never failed: no mortal Powers nor Armies whatsoever, having either Impudency or Ability enough to deny, detain them from them, if they will but (b) generally, unanimously, courageously, imp. 18. 1, 3, 4. Jer. portunately claim and demand them, as their Birth-rights. 38. 5.

<sup>a</sup> See Part. 1. p. 14, 15, 16.  
<sup>(b)</sup> See 1 Sam. 8. 4, to 21. ch. 12. 2. 2 Sam. 18. 1, 3, 4. Jer. But if they will still basely disown, betray, and cowardly desert both them and their *Assertors*, and leave them to a single combate with their combined Jesuitical enemies (whom

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

( whom none take care to discover, suppress or banish out of our Realms, where they now swarm more than ever ) and *Armed Invaders*; the Fate of our old English Britons, when they improvidently neglected to unite their Counsels, Forces against, and fought only singly with the invading united *Armies of the Romans*, is like to be Englands condition now; (i) *Dum pugnant singuli, vincuntur universi*: the single *Champions* of our Liberties, Laws, Rights, will be easily over-powered, destroyed, for the present; and all others (by their unworthy *Treachery* and *Baseness*, in not adhering to, but abandoning their present Patrons) disengaged, disabled to propugne, regain them for the future: and the whole *Kingdom* vanquished, yea enslaved for eternity in all humane probability, to those who have broken your (k) former yokes of wood, but instead thereof have made for, and put upon you yokes of Iron: and by the Jesuites Machiavilian Plots and Policies, will reduce you by degrees under a meer Papal yoke at last, having deeply leavened many in power and arms, with their forementioned most desperate Jesuitical Positions, Practises and Politicks, which will soon usher in the whole body of Popery, and all damnable Heresies whatsoever, by degrees, to the ruine of our Religion, as well as Laws and Liberties.

Wherefore, seeing it neither is, nor can be reputed *Treason, Felony, Sedition, Faction*, nor any *Crime* at all, but a commendable bounden *Duty*, to which our *Protestations*, *Oaths*, *Leagues*, *Covenants*, *Reason*, *Law*, *Conscience*, our own private and the publick Interest, Safety of the Nation engage us, for all and every *Freeborn Englishman*, joynly and severally to claim, maintain, preserve, by all just, honourable, publick and private wayes they may, their unquestionable *Hereditary Birth-right*, *Laws*, *Liberties*, *Parliamentary Priviledges*, &c; here asserted, and presented to them, after so much *Blood*, *Treasure*, *Labour* spent to rescue them out of the hands of old and late oppressing *Tyrants*; nor any *Offence* at all, but a *praise-worthy service* now in me, or any other, publickly to encourage them to this duty, ( and the strenuous defence of our endangered undermined

(i) *Taciturn in  
vita ignota.*

(k) *Ier. 28.  
13, 14.*

To the truly Christian Reader,

mixed Protestant Religion, subverted with our Laws & Liberties, and living or dying together with them) at this present season, as I have done heretofore upon all occasions; And seeing none can justly censure them or me, for discharging our Oaths, Consciences, Covenants, Protestations, Duties in this kinde, but such as shall thereby declare themselves *Pub-  
lick Enemies and Traitors to the whole Nation, Laws, Go-  
vernment, Parliaments of England*, as the Resolutions,

<sup>¶ Part. i. ch. 1.</sup> Presidents, \* herein cited, yea their own *best friends*, ( and our Reformed Religion too) have already adjudged them:

<sup>¶ See the Ho-  
milies against  
Disobedience  
& wilfull Re-  
bellion.</sup> And seeing\* Sir Thomas Fairfax and the *General Council  
of his Army*, held at Putney Sept. 9. 1647. in their *Declar-  
ation*, concerning THE FUNDAMENTAL AVTHORI-

TY & GOVERNMENT OF THE KINGDON; <sup>presented by their appointment,</sup> in these words: *Whereas a Mem-  
ber of the General Council of this ARMY, hath publiquely de-  
clared and expressed himself, THAT THERE IS NO VI-  
SIBLE AUTHORITY IN THE KINGDOM, BUT THE  
POWER & FORCE OF THE SWORD, (as others of  
them say since, and now both by words and deeds, without  
controll.) We therefore the said GENERAL COUNCIL* ( to testify, How FARRE OUR HEARTS & MINDS ARE FROM ANY DESIGN OF SETTING UP THE POWER OF THE SWORD ABOVE OR AGAINST THE FUNDAMENTAL AUTHORITY & GOVERNMENT OF THE KINGDOM, & OUR READINESSE TO MAINTAIN AND UPHOLD THE SAID AU-

THORITY:) <sup>have by a Free Vote (in the said Council, no  
man contradicting) judged the said Member, TO BE EX-  
PELLED THE SAID COUNCIL. Which we hereby  
thought fit to publish, as A CLEAR MANIFESTATION  
OF OUR DISLIKE & DISAVOWING SVCH PRIN-  
CIPLES OR PRACTISES; ( which notwithstanding they  
have sinceavowed, pursued in the highest degree; and I  
desire them now to repent of, reform, and really make  
good;) have engaged to maintain and propugne with their  
Swords, what I here endeavour to defend, support, with  
my Pen. And seeing they intituled their Printed Papers,</sup>

and a<sup>t</sup> Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

*A Declaration of the Engagements, Remonstrances, Representations, Proposals, Desires, and Resolutions, from his Excellency Sir Tho: Fairfax, and THE GENERAL COVNCEL OF THE ARMY, for setting OF HIS MAJESTY IN HIS JVST RIGHTS, the PARLAMENT in their JVST PRIVILEGES, and the SVBJECTS in their LIBERTIES & FREEDOMS. Also Representations of THE GRIEVANCES OF THE KINGDOM, & REMEDIES PROPOVNDED, for REMOVING THE PRESENT PRESSVRES WHEREBY THE SVBJECTS ARE BVRDENED (and EXCISES, TAXES amongst the rest) And the Resolutions of the Army, For the estab- lishment of a firm & lasting peace IN CHVRCH & KING- DOM, printed by their own, and the Lords House special Order, London 1647: the self-same things I here contend, plead for, (which I wish they would now really make good by their future consultations and actions to avoid the just censures of meer Hypocrites and Impostors, as the whole World will else repute them.) I shall therefore exhort not only the whole Army, Army-Officers, and their General Council; but likewise the whole English Nation, and all real Lovers of their own or their Countries Liberties, Peace, Laws, Ease, Safety, Religion, and future establishment in this common Cause, in the words of the Philistines one to another in a time of need, when they were greatly affraid,*

1 Sam. 4. 9. Be strong and (1) quit your selves like men, O ye Philistines, that ye be not servants to the Hebrews, as they have been to you: quit your selves like men, fight, &c. That so, (as the Apostle writes in the like case, Phil. 1. 27, 28.) whether I come and see you, or be absent from you, I may bear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the Gospell; (and the ancient Fundamental Laws, Liberties, Rights, Priviledges, Parliaments, Government and Religion of our Realm, which the Jesuites and their Instruments make their Master-piece totally to undermine and subvert) And in nothing terrified by your Adversaries, which is to them an evident token of Perdition, but to you of Salvation, and that of God. If the Pres- fidens.

ſidents of your renowned Ancestors here recorded ; the Patterns of (m) many gallant Pagan Romans, Gracians, who have spent their Lives, for their Countries, Laws, Liberties; Or if my example and these my Lucubrations shall provoke you hereunto; I shall think my labour well bestowed ; and you and your Posterities worthy to live like *English Freeman*.  
But if you wil now neither manfully demand, speak, nor contend for them any more, out of a slavish fear of a prevailing Army raised only for their just defence, or any other humane Powers whatsoever ; nor once adventure with united Spirits now at last, so much as confidently, boldly to ask these your unquestionable Birthrights at the Thrones of any mortal Grandees, your Fellow-Subjects, when God Almighty himself commands you, to come with boldnesse to his celestial Throne of Grace, that you may obtain (not meer right as here, but) Mercy it ſelf, and Grace to help in time of need, Heb. 4. 16. *Qui timide rogat, docet negare*; you can neither hope for, nor ever obtain them for the future, but deserve eternally to forfeit them, and you and yours to be made slaves for ever: However I (though these Collections prove ſuccesleſs) ſhal carry this as a comfortable Cordial with me to my grave, *That I have faithfully discharged my Conscience and bounden Duty to my degenerous Native Country, by endeavouring all I could both to make and preserve it free indeed; to detect and prevent all Jesuitical Plots and Practiſes, to undermine, imbroyl, divide, ſubvert, ruine it; and used my utmoſt ſincereſt conſtant endeavours in my place and calling herein.* But if through the Malice, Tyranny or Injuſtice of any prevailing Enemies of publick Freedom, or Jesuitical Agents, I ſhall chance to ſuffer for it in any kind, (as I have formerly done for moſt of my publick ſervices of this nature) be it close-imprisonments, Fines, Pillories, Stigmatizings or Death it ſelf; I ſhall onely ſay beforehand, as *Gregory the Great did heretofore: Indict. 2. Epift. 78. In cauſa qua Deo placere cupio, homines non formido*: and as noble Heroick Esther did, in a like publick caſe for her en-dangered captivated Nation, (n) *If I perish, I perish: and this my unrighteous ſuffering, ſhall be a new Gloriouſe Crown*

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

*Crown of Martyrdom to my head, both in earth and in (o) hea-* (o) 2 Cor. 4. 16.  
*ven it self: when the Crowns, Names, Fames of all my* <sup>1</sup> Tim 4.7, 8.  
*causeless malicious Enemies, Adversaries, Persecutors, and*  
*all Enemies to our Laws, Liberties, Priviledges, Parliaments,*  
*Kingdoms, Church, Religion, shall fade, stink, perish like*  
*dung, and be had in perpetual execration in all our three*  
*Kingdoms; yea, my Bonds, Blood, Books, shall (I hope)*  
*through Gods own blessing on them, prove SEMEN EC-*  
*CLESIÆ, REIPUBLICÆ, REGNI, LEGUM, LIBER-*  
*TATUM, AC PARLIAMENTORUM ANGLIÆ, in*  
*future ages, when their carcasses, who are publick En-*  
*emies to, and subverters of them, shall lie rotting in their*  
*Graves, and their Souls (without sincere repentance) be*  
*searching, roaring in infernal flames: nay, they shall rise up*  
*in Judgement against and condemn them before all the Tri-*  
*bunals in Earth and Heaven, both now, and hereafter at*  
*that Great Judgement-day, when I, they, and all mankind*  
*shall and must (p) appear naked, upon equal terms, ( stript* (p) 2 Cor. 5.  
*quite of all armed guards and earthly greatness, to secure* 10, 11. Mar.  
*them from being brought to Judgement) before the Tribu-* 25, 31, 32.  
*nal of Jesus Christ himself, (in the view of all the Holy An-*  
*gels and Mankind) to give an account of all the things done in the*  
*body in this world, according to that I and they have done, whe-*  
*ther it be good or evil; When all Hypocritical Masks, Dis-*  
*guises, Carnal State-policies of pretended Necessity, Publick*  
*Safety, Danger, Justice; with all other Machiavillian un-*  
*righteous Practises to gild over the most unrighteous, impio-*  
*us, oppressing, bloody, treasonable, perfidious publick*  
*Actions, will prove but so many Aggravations of Politici-*  
*cians Crying Sins, and of their eternal punishments for*  
*them.*

To draw towards a conclusion; I shall recommend to the whole English Nation, and all cordial well-wishers to the Prosperity, Peace, Settlement of our distracted Kingdoms, Churches, and endangered Religion, either in or out of power, these five Considerations more, which have deeply affected my Spirit, and particularly engaged me in this Undertaking, for their better information, and

To the truly Christian Reader,

our common preservation from total and final independent  
ruine.

1. That (a) *Father Parsons*, the trayterous English Jesu-  
ite and his *Jesuitical society*, some years since prophesied:  
That they have it by revelation, that by special command-  
ment from God, their ORDER AND SOCIETY was mi-  
raculously instituted for this end, to work a DISMALL  
CHANGE amongst us: that the time is come, WHEREIN  
ALL LAWS, CUSTOMS AND ORDERS MUST BE  
ALTERED, AND ALL THINGS TURNED UPSIDE  
DOWN: and that they, being the only men that have the  
name, office and authority of Jesus, BY THEM IT IS,  
THAT THIS MARVELLOUS CHANGE & ALTERA-  
TION SHALL BE WROUGHT, *in such sort*, AS FROM  
THE BEGINNING OF THE WORLD WAS THE  
LIKE NEVER HEARD OF BEFORE TO THIS PRE-  
SENT. And may we not then justly suspect, fear, conclude,  
that all our late dismal changes, and turning all things up-  
side down in our Church, State, Kingdoms, Parliaments,  
were originally promoted, contrived by the Jesuites, and  
effected by the seduced Officers and Souldiers, as their delu-  
ded instruments? And can we then cry them up for such tran-  
scendent rich Mercies, Deliverances, Pledges of Gods Love  
and special Favours to our Kingdom, Nation; as some now  
Proclaim them to the world, because themselves have gai-  
ned so much unrighteous Power, Treasure, Possessions for  
the present, by these changes and ruines of our Kingdome? Or  
shall we peremptorily deny them to be originally contri-  
ved, promoted by the *Jesuites*, and immediately effected by  
their seduced Instruments, because they have been likewise  
brought to passe by Gods own permissive Providence, in Wrath,  
Injustice, as a deserved punishment for our manifold crying  
sins (not in Mercy towards us) as *Hosea* 10. 3. &c. 14. 5.  
C. 13. 1, 2, 3, 7, 8, 9, 11, 16. *Prov.* 28. 2. *Isa.* 17. 1. to  
11. *Ezech.* 17. 12. to 24. C. 23. 3. to 17. 1 *Sam.* 8. through-  
out. *2 Chron.* 11. 13. to 19. C. 25. 20, &c. *Jer.* 18. 7, 8.  
C. 17. 25, 26, 27. C. 22. 4. to 13. *Dan.* 2. 21. C. 5. 26. to  
31. *1/4. 19.* 2, 3, &c. fully resolve? Surely, as Gods  
per-

Nota.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

permissive, ordering, over-ruing Providence, doth no wayes justify nor extenuate the guilt of any Traytors, Rebels, Murderers, Conspirators sinnes, Treasons, Rebellions, Murders, Regicides, Conspiracies, Raibes, Oppressions, or Wicked Devices, which he permits them to plot, act, accomplish; so it doth in no wise exempt them in Gods or Mens esteem from being the true Original Plotters, Contrivers, and immediate instrumental Actors of them; nor from the divine or humane Punishments which they in justice deserue; as is most evident by Gen. 50. 15. to 21. Psal. 37. 7. 9. Prov. 24. 30, 21, 22. Job 20. 5, 6, &c. 1 Kings 12. 12. to 25. c. 15. 23. to 30. c. 16. 1. to 30. specially ver. 7, 8. 2 Kings 11. 1. to 17. c. 14. 5, 6. c. 15. 8. to 32. c. 17. 21, 22. 1 Sam. 8: 2 Sam. 1. 2. to 17. c. 4. throughout. Hos. 1. 4. c. 8. 4, 5. Isay 29. 15, 16 c. 10. 5, 6, 7, &c. Acts 1. 16. to 21. c. 2. 23. 1 Thess. 2. 14, 15, 16. Mat. 27. 3, 4, 5. compared together. And if we should look upon all our late Changes, Revolutions in our Kingdoms, Government, Church, Parliaments, Religion, Laws, (wrought by the *lascies* and their Instruments) as the mere wonderfull immediate Prosecutions and Glorious Operations of God himself in the world, and upon the instruments employed in them, only as Gods own precious chosen Saints and Servants, accomplishing nothing but his own determinate Will, Providence, Council, (though to satisfie their own ambition, covetousnesse, malice, rapine, blood-thirstinesse, lusts) as many now proclaim them, and not as Conspirators, Treacherous, Perfidious, Pernicious Malefactors in the highest degree, as well as Jack Cade, Wat Tyler, Strafford, Canterbury, or the murderers of our Saviour, Joash, Ibbethesh, with other Kings heretofore, and of Henry the 3. and 4. of France, of late; there should then be no Traytors, Conspirators, Murderers, Sinners, Treasons, Conspiracies, Murders, Sinnes, in the world (being all perpetrated by Gods permissive Providence) no Law, nor Hell to punish them: and it would be no less than a direct resisting, fighting against God and his Providence, for any Christians, Kingdoms, Kings, or Loyal Subjects, to pray against, resist, oppose the Treasons, Murders, Conspiracies, Vjurpations, Rebel-

Rebellions, Innovations, Plots, of any Jesuities, or Romish Emissaries, or their under-Agents, against our Kings, Kingdoms, Governors, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties, Government and Religion; which would be professed Blasphemy, or Frenzy at least, for any man to affirm.

2. That this Jesuite Parsons in his *Book of the Reformation of all the States of England*, as he prescribed Reformations to the Prince, Courts, Counsellors, Noblemen, Bishops, Prelates, Pastors, Universities, Lawyers, Laws, in which he will have STRANGE METAMORPHOSES; so likewise, THE COVRT OF PARLIAMENT HE WILL HAVE BROUGHT TO BETTER FORM, as W. W. (a secular Priest) in *A Dialogue between a Secular Priest and a Lay-Gentleman*, printed at Rhemes, An. 1601. p 95. Watson in his *Quodlibets*, p. 92. to 96. 320. to 334. William Clark (a secular Priest) in his *Answer to Father Parsons Label*, p. 75. &c.) in direct terms attest. And may we not then justly

\* See their printed Decla-  
sus of June our Kingdoms, Parliaments, Government, Laws, &c. (ori-  
34. 23. Aug. 1.  
2. 1647.  
Their Agree-  
ment of the  
People, Jan.  
1648. & Go-  
vernment of  
the Common-  
wealth of  
England, 1654.  
moulded by  
them.

ginally promoted by our \* *Army Counsels*, and Officers) proceeded primarily from the Jesuites Projections & Plots against them, if the Statutes of 23 Eliz. c. 1. 27 Eliz. c. 2.  
35 Eliz. c. 2. 3. 1ac. c. 1. 2, 4, 5, 7. 7 1ac. c. 6. and the manifold Declarations of both Houses of Parliament, *Exact Collection*, p. 491, 492, 497, 498, 616. 631, 666, 698, 813, to 828. may be judges?

3. That the Jesuites drift directly is (immediately by means of \* CONQUEST intended for England) to bring it and all Christendom into an uproar, FOR COMMON SOVLDIERS TO EXAMINE THEIR SOVERAIGNS, WHAT

Do not many now boast, talk, write of such a Conquest by the Army over England?

TITLE THEY HOLD BY; that therupon themselves by craft, money and multitudes gathered together through their Policy, may bring England, (and then) Spain, and all the rest under their subjection and Monarchy: And that principally by this Jesuitical Position; That every Presopic or Tar-  
tarian multitude, getting once the stile and title of a PHIL-  
LICK STATE, or HELVETIAN COMMON-  
WEALTH, may alter, change and innovate the course of in-  
heritances.

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

heritances and succession TO CROWNS AND KINGDOMS, and also to every private Persons heritage holden in Fee simple: as (b) William Watson assures us in these very (b) Quodlibets, terms. And whether the Jesuites have not instructed our P. 322, 323, Army Officers and Common Soulders upon this pretext, and 333, 334. for this very end, to examine their Sovereigns, yea, our Parliaments Titles, Priviledges, and Powers too of late, and dis- pose of, reject, suppress them at their pleasure; let themselves, the whole Nation, with all in present power, in the fear of God, most seriously consider, without passion or affection, before it be over-late.

4. That the Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance (which (c) 1 Eliz. c. 1. 2 Eliz. c. 1. 1 Jac. 5. 4. 3 Jac. c. 4. 3. 7 Jac. c. 6. 16 caroli. The Act for Trien- nial Parlia- ments, &c. See J. E. his Right & Juris- diction of the Prelate and the Prince; cap. 15. Beca- uses Bellarmine, Lessius, Euda- man Johannii, & others a- gainst this Oath. See the Printed Edicts repealing the Engage- ment, A. 1649. (d) See the Propositions for the Tre- aty. (e) See the Preface to the Covenant, an in-

all Members of Parliament ought by Law to take, before they can sit, or vote as Members) specially made and prescribed by our most wise, zealous (c) Protestant Parliaments, to prevent the Treasonable plots and designs of Popes, Jesuites, and Papists, against our Protestant Princes, Realms, Parliaments, Religion, though confirmed by many Statutes, and containing in them only the Declaration of such a Duty, as every true and well-affected Subject, not only by the bond of Allegiance, but also by the COMMANDMENT OF GOD, ought to bear to the King, his Heirs and Successors; and none but persons infected with Popish Superstition formerly oppugned, (as the Prologue of the Statute of 7 Jacobi c. 6. positively resolves) have by late State innovators, not only been discontinued, suspended, but declaimed against and repealed (as much as in them lay) as (d) VNLAWFUL OATHS; the old Lawes against Jesuites and Popish Seminaries, discontinued, abrogated, or coldly executed. (e) The New Oath for abjuration of Popery, with all Bills against Jesuites and Papists, presented to the late King by both Houses the last Parliament, and by him consented to in the Isle of Wight, wholly laid aside, and quite buried in oblivion. The Solemn Pro- testation, League and Covenant, prescribed by the last Parliament taken by all the well-affected in all the 3 Kingdoms (to (f) prevent the dangerous plots of Papists, Jesuites, and our common enemies to destroy our Religion, Churches, Realms, Government, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties) quite

To the truly Christian Reader,

(g) See the Edicts for the Engagement, Ann. 1649. antiquated, decried, detested, and a (g) New Engagement forcibly imposed under highest penalties and disabilities upon all men, diametrically contrary to these Oaths, Protestations and Covenants, which have been ( by a new kind of Papal power) publickly dispensed with, and the people absolved from them, to become sworn Homages to other new self-created Lords and Masters. And are not all these, with the late Proclaimed Universal Toleration and Protection of all Religions, to considerate zealous Protestants, strong Arguments of the Jesuites Predominancy in our late counsels, transactions, and changes of publike Government?

5. That the Notion of THE PRESENT GOVERNMENT, (in my weak apprehension) derived its original from the Jesuites late-invented (b) PRESENT CHURCH, the onely Supream Power and Judge of Controversies, which all men must submit unto, by a mere absolute blind Obedience, and implicit faith, without dispute by their determination: as they must do, by a like Jesuitical blind obedience (newly taught and obtruded on us) to that present Republican Government, and new Optimacy, and Popularity, lately set up instead of our Monarchy. Which two forms of Government, and want of a King and Monarchy, as they are the

\* Thucydides  
Hist. 1. 2. 3.  
Plutarch, Sy-  
ander, Ariofor,  
Polit. 1.4, & 5.  
(i) See Gratius  
de jure Belli &  
Pacis, 1.3. c. 15.  
p. 537.  
(k) Thallos  
Quælibet, p.  
320, 321, 322,  
332, 333.  
(l) De Monar.  
Hist. c. 25..  
(m) Conte de  
Galla 220,  
Gaspard 210  
Hill part 3. p.  
175, 176.

Hiatus of a peoples Sins, and the Transgressions of a Land by Gods own resolution, not a Mercy. Hosea 10. 3. c. 1. 4:  
Ier. 18. 7. Prov. 28. 2. Ezr. 19. 14. Lam. 4. 20. c. 5, 7, 8, 12. so they were the inventions of Factions Grecians at first, which \* put all their Cities into Combustions, fury, frenzy, and civil wars against each other, to their utter overthrow in conclusion: witness these verses of (i) Heniochus, a Greek Comedian:

Tum gemina ad illas accesserunt Mulieres (TITAS  
QUÆ CUNCTA CONTURBARUNT: OPTIMA-  
Est nomen alteri: alteri POPULARITAS; (RUNT.  
Quarum incitatu PRIDEM EXTERNATÆ FU-

So the Jesuits, (k) Parsons, (l) Campion, (m) Car. Richelieu, designed to introduce & set them up among us in Engl. Scotl. and Ireland, of purpose to divide, destroy us by civil wars and combustions, and bring us under their Jesuitical power at last, as

and all Zealous Protestant Freemen of England.

as the marginal Authorities declare to all the world. And if this be undeniable to all having any sense of Religion, Peace or publick Safety left within their brests, is it not more than high time for us to awake out of our former lethargy, & for-did, selfish stupidity, to prevent our ruine, by these and other forementioned Jesuitical practises? Or can any Englishman, or real Parl. be justly offended with me for this impartial discovery of them? Or for my endeavours to put all the dis-located Members and broken bones of our old inverted fundamental body Politick, into their <sup>\*</sup> due places, joints and po-  
stures again, without which there is no more (n) p<sup>oss</sup>ibility of reducing it to its p<sup>er</sup>fect health, ease, settlement, tranquillity, prosp<sup>er</sup>ity, or of preserving it from perpetual pain, inquieta-  
tion, conlumption and approaching death, than of a natural body whose principal members cont<sup>in</sup>ue dis-joyned, and bones broken all in pieces, as all prudent <sup>States-Physicians</sup> must acknowledge.

These five Considerations, together with the Premises; will I presume sufficiently wipe off all the malicious scanda-  
lous Imputations, wher<sup>tho</sup> ~~Militi<sup>ers</sup>~~ and other Papists, have injuriously cast upon the Principles and chief Professors of our Reformed Religion, in relation to the late exorbitant Proce-  
d<sup>ings</sup> against the King, Parliament, the publike Revolutions, Confusions, Ataxies both in our Church & Kingdoms; and rector them on the Jesuitical, Papal, seditious, & reasonable, Antimonarchical Principles and Professors of their Religion, especially the Jesu<sup>ans</sup> and French Cardinals (Militi<sup>ers</sup> his late Lords and Masters) the original Contrivers, and chief clande-  
stine Promoters of them, as every day more and more discov-  
ers to the world. And withall abundantly justifie this my undertaking & impartial discovery of Jesuitical plots to ruin our Church, Religion, Kingdoms, Parliaments, Laws, Liberties, Government, against all malicious Enemies, Accusers, Malig-  
ners whatsoever, before all the Tribunals of God or Men, where I shal be ready to justifie them upon all occasions. In perpetual testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my Hand, and by Gods Grace shall ever be ready to seal them and the truth of God with my blood, if called out to do it.

Swainswick, Aug. 12. 1654. William Prynne.

<sup>\*</sup> Optandum quidem est si modo  
Respublica sal-  
via et incolunis  
futura sit, ut  
Civitatis partes  
omnes quidem  
sibi content, in  
suo<sup>rum</sup> statu per-  
manent. At ut  
praeferri statu  
gandeant, Reges  
Regie dignitatis  
sunt. Et inde  
commoventur;  
Optimales Se-  
naciorum, bac  
enim illis pro  
vivitatis sue  
primo est: po-  
pulus Ephore.  
Aristot. Polit.  
1. 2. c. 7.

(n) See 1 Cor.  
12. 12. 10 32.  
25. H. 8. c. 22.  
26. H. 8. c. 3.  
1. Jac. c. 1, 2.  
3. Jac. c. 1, 2.